Tariana texts and cultural context

compiled and edited by
Alexandra Y. Aikhenvald

Languages of the World/Texts 07
LINCOM EUROPA
## Contents

List of Tables, Diagrams and Maps 3  
Abbreviations 6  
Preface 7  

Introduction — Linguistic situation, short history and cultural background  

of the Tariana 8  
1 Tariana and the multilingual setting of the Vaupes 8  
2 The linguistic situation in the Vaupes and in the Upper Rio Negro region 8  
3 Language attitudes and historical evidence 9  
3.1 Multilingualism and language attitudes 9  
3.2 Traditional evidence 10  
3.3 Historical information about the Tariana, and their present state 14  

4 The Tariana language 16  
4.1 Language names 16  
4.2 Previous studies of the language 16  
4.3 The linguistic profile of Tariana 17  

5 Cultural background 21  
5.1 Environment, means of subsistence and material culture 21  
5.2 Social organisation. Kinship and marriage 26  
5.2.1 Social organisation 26  
5.2.2 Relations with neighbours 28  
5.2.3 Kinship system and marriage 29  
5.3 Ceremonies and beliefs 30  
5.3.1 General remarks: the Tariana pantheon 30  
5.3.2 Shamans 33  
5.3.3 Initiation. Feasts and rituals 33  
5.3.4 Taboos and fears 35  
5.3.5 Naming and names 36  

6 The present collection 37  

Stories  
1 The Tariana. Author: Cândido Brito 39  
2 The Deeds of the Creator. Author: Cândido Brito 45  
3 The Origin of Tobacco, Snuff and Fire. Author: Cândido Brito 69  
4 The Secret Flute. Author: Cândido Brito 83  
5 A Menstruating Girl. Author: Juvino Brito 89  
6 How Children Turned into Guans. Author: Olívia Brito 94  
7 Evil Spirits. Author: Graciliano Brito 103  
8 A Man and a Snake. Author: Juvino Brito 111  
9 A Widow. Author: Jusé Brito 132  
10 The Tariana Language. Author: Graciliano Brito 141  

References 144  

Index 147
List of Tables, Diagrams and Maps

Table 1. The Brazilian Vaupés: languages and their speakers 9
Table 2. Properties of Tariana place names 12
Table 3. Examples of multilingual ‘actual’ place names 12
Table 4. Examples of monolingual ‘historical’ place names 13
Table 5. Examples of ‘mythological’ place names 13
Table 6. Traditional divisions of the year 23
Table 7. Structure of the day in Tariana 25
Table 8. Tariana kinship system 31
Table 9. Classification of shamans and their powers 34
Table 10. Hierarchy of evil spirits of the jungle 36
Table 11. Names of the Brito family (Wamiarikune subtribe) 37

Diagram 1. The structure of a Tariana longhouse 27

Map 1. Languages of the Içana-Vaupés basin with approximate locations 4
Map 2. Languages spoken in the region of Upper Rio Negro, Brazil 5
Map 1. Languages of the Içana-Vaupés basin with approximate locations
Map 2. Languages spoken in the region of Upper Rio Negro, Brazil
# Abbreviations

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>subject of a transitive verb</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ADV</td>
<td>adverbial</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AFF</td>
<td>affix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AG</td>
<td>focussed and/or agentive subject</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AN(IM)</td>
<td>animate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ANT</td>
<td>anterior</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>APPR</td>
<td>approximative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AUG</td>
<td>augmentative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CAUS</td>
<td>causative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CL</td>
<td>classifier</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CL.SP</td>
<td>closed space</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COLL</td>
<td>collective</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COMPL</td>
<td>completive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COND</td>
<td>conditional</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CONTR</td>
<td>contrast</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CONTREXP</td>
<td>counterexpectation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CONV</td>
<td>converb</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CURV</td>
<td>curved</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DECL</td>
<td>decarative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DEM</td>
<td>demonstrative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DIM</td>
<td>diminutive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DIST</td>
<td>distal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DS</td>
<td>different subject</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EMPH</td>
<td>emphatic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EX(IST)</td>
<td>existential</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EXC</td>
<td>excessive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EXTRAL</td>
<td>extralocal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>f, fem, FEM</td>
<td>feminine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FIN</td>
<td>finality</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FOC.A/S</td>
<td>focussed subject</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FR</td>
<td>frustrative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FUT</td>
<td>future</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HAB</td>
<td>habitat</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HABIT</td>
<td>habitual</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HORT</td>
<td>hortative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HUM</td>
<td>human</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IMM.IMPV</td>
<td>immediate imperative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IMP</td>
<td>impersonal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IMPV</td>
<td>imperative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INAN</td>
<td>inanimate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INDF</td>
<td>indefinite</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INDIR</td>
<td>indirect (command)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INDIV</td>
<td>individuated</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INF</td>
<td>inferred</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INFR</td>
<td>inferred</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INS</td>
<td>instrumental case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INT</td>
<td>intentional</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INTER</td>
<td>interrogative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LOC</td>
<td>locative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LOCN</td>
<td>locational derivational affix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>masc, MASC</td>
<td>masculine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MENT</td>
<td>mental</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NAT.PHEN</td>
<td>natural phenomenon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NEG</td>
<td>negation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NEG.EX</td>
<td>negative existential</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nf</td>
<td>nonfeminine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NOM</td>
<td>nominalisation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NOM.FUT</td>
<td>nominal future</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NOM.PAST</td>
<td>nominal past</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NON.INDIV</td>
<td>non-individuated</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NPOSS</td>
<td>non-possessed</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NUM.CL</td>
<td>numeral classifier</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O</td>
<td>direct object</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OBJ</td>
<td>object case</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>p</td>
<td>person</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PAST.REL</td>
<td>past relative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PAUS</td>
<td>pausal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PEJ</td>
<td>pejorative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PERF</td>
<td>perfective</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PERM.IMPV</td>
<td>permissive imperative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PL</td>
<td>plural</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>POSS</td>
<td>possessive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PREC</td>
<td>precative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PRES</td>
<td>present</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PRES.INFR</td>
<td>present inferred</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PRES.VIS</td>
<td>present visual</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PROB.FUT</td>
<td>probable future</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PROH</td>
<td>prohibitive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PURP</td>
<td>purposive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>REC</td>
<td>reciprocal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>REC.P</td>
<td>recent past</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>REF</td>
<td>referential kinship term</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>REL</td>
<td>relative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>REM.P.REP</td>
<td>remote past inferred</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>REM.P.NON.VIS</td>
<td>remote past non-visual</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>REM.P.SEC.H</td>
<td>remote past second hand</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>REP</td>
<td>repetition</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>REPR</td>
<td>reported</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RES</td>
<td>result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S</td>
<td>subject of an intransitive verb</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SEQ</td>
<td>sequential</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sg</td>
<td>singular</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SINGL</td>
<td>singulative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SS</td>
<td>same subject</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TOP.ADV</td>
<td>topic advancing voice</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TOP.NON.A/S</td>
<td>topical non-subject</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VERT</td>
<td>vertical</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VIS</td>
<td>visual</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VOC</td>
<td>vocative (kinship address form)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Preface

The effective authors of this book are the Brito family — the father, Cândido, and his four children — Olivia, Graciliano, Juvino and José — who are among the last remaining speakers of Tariana and the last experts on Tariana culture and tradition. Cândido and his family welcomed me into their midst, offering friendship and assistance; and shared with me their wonderful language and the culture and traditional lore that go with it.

This book consists of an Introduction\(^1\) — which provides a brief overview of Tariana culture and habitat — and ten stories in Tariana.

My warmest thanks go to all my teachers of other North Arawak languages of the Upper Rio Negro — Humberto Baltazar and Pedro Angelo Tomas (Warekena), the late Cândelário da Silva (Bare), Afonso, Albino and João Fontes, Celestino da Silva and Cecília and Laureano da Silva, Januário Paiva and — last but not least — my very first teacher, the late Marcília Rodrigues (Baniwa). I am also grateful to those who helped me with learning a few things about East Tucano languages — Tiago Cardoso (Desano, Piratapuya) and Alfredo Fontes (Tucano). Eliseu Muniz (the grandson of Aníbal Muniz: see §4.2) and Maria and Rafael Brito provided useful help in the initial stages of my fieldwork.

I am deeply grateful to R.M.W. Dixon for encouragement and comments. I have also profited from discussions with Henri Ramirez, Stephen Hugh-Jones, Elsa Gomez-Imbert and Janet Barnes.

I would also like to acknowledge my debt to Padre Casimiro Bekṣta, an expert on the area of the Upper Rio Negro and the Vaupés, who frequently helped me with information and advice. This collection would have been impossible without the assistance and friendship of Silvana and Valteir Martins, and of Lenita and Elias Coelho.

\(^1\) All the relevant terms in the Introduction are supplied with a Tariana equivalent in parentheses.
Introduction. Linguistic situation, short history and cultural background of the Tariana

1. Tariana and the multilingual setting of the Vaupés. Tariana is spoken in the linguistic area of the Vaupés river basin, in an unusual linguistic situation of obligatory multilingualism, dictated by the principles of linguistic exogamy. Tariana is the only Arawak language spoken in the Vaupés region; the other languages belong to the East Tucano subgroup. There is a strong inhibition against ‘language-mixing’, viewed in terms of lexical loans.

Tariana combines grammatical features inherited from proto-Arawak with those developed under the areal influence from East Tucano, alongside independent innovations and phenomena of language attrition (for the analysis of the patterns of areal diffusion in Tariana see Aikhenvald 1996a, forthcoming-b and c).

Tariana is spoken as the first (‘father’s’) language by about 100 people (none of whom are children) in two main settlements on the Vaupés river, the area of Upper Rio Negro, Amazonas, Brazil: Santa Rosa (previous names: Jukira-ponta, Tariana Iwi-taku ‘point of salt’) and Periquitos (Kekeke-pani ‘rapid of a sparrow’, or Tupiya-rí-numana ‘the mouth of a lizard’). There are also a few Tariana-speaking people in Ianarete and Ji-Ponta — see Map 1. Most of those who identify as Tariana no longer speak the language (see Table 1; cf. Aikhenvald 1996a and Moreira and Moreira 1994).

This introductory part is organised as follows. In §2 I describe the linguistic situation in the Vaupés and in the Upper Rio Negro region, with a particular focus on Tariana. Then, in §3, I consider language attitudes in the Vaupés area and historical evidence for the migrations of the Tariana. The following section, §4, discusses the Tariana language — its names, dialects, previous studies, and its linguistic profile. Cultural background — environment, means of subsistence and material culture, as well as social organisation, kinship and marriage, ceremonies and beliefs — is described in §5. Finally, in §6, I overview the Tariana stories included in this collection.

2. The linguistic situation in the Vaupés and in the Upper Rio Negro region. The Içana and Vaupés basins and adjacent regions, within the Upper Rio Negro basin (see Map 2), contain languages of the following genetic groups: North Arawak, East Tucano, and Makú. There is no proof of genetic relationship between any of these language groups.

Since today over 1500 people identify as Tariana (Rodrigues 1986), the language is spoken by only about a hundred people. The dialect complex of Baniwa of Içana (also known as Kurripako) is spoken by 3,000-4,000 people on the Içana and its tributaries and in the adjacent regions of Colombia and Venezuela (see the list of dialects given by Rodrigues 1986: 67 and Nimuendajú 1982: 174-176). Warekena, a dialect of Baniwa of Guainia, is

---

2 The denomination of the Arawak language family, the genetic unity of which was first recognized by P. Gilij in 1783, has been the subject of a controversy between Arawak scholars for some time. The majority of native South American scholars use the name *Arawak* (*Aruákt*) to refer to the group of unquestionably related languages; a number of scholars, mainly, North-Americans, prefer to use the term *Arawak(-an)* to refer to much more doubtful genetic unities of a higher taxonomic order, and reserve the term *Maipuran*, or *Maipurean*, for the group of languages which South American scholars call Arawak, or Aruák (see Payne 1991, Kaufman 1990). Here I keep the denomination *Arawak* for the family of definitely related languages, following Rodrigues (1986).
spoken by a few dozen old people on the Xié river, and by about 200 people in Venezuela (see Aikhenvald 1998b). There is also old Warekena (also known as Warena, or Guarequena) spoken by a few old people on the Xié river, and by a few hundred people in Venezuela where they moved early this century (see Aikhenvald 1998b). Finally, Bare, once the most important language along the Upper Rio Negro, is now almost extinct (see Aikhenvald 1995a).³

The North Arawak languages of the Içana and Vaupés and the adjacent regions of the Upper Rio Negro basin fall into three distinct genetic groups: (a) Warekena, (b) Bare and (c) Baniwa of Içana, Tariana and Warena (Aikhenva ld forthcoming-c). Baniwa of Içana shares about 80% lexicon with Tariana; however, their grammatical structure shows a number of significant differences.⁴

Several languages of the East Tucano subgroup are spoken on the Vaupés — Tucano, Tuyuca/Yuruti, Guanano/Piratapuya, Desano/Siriano, Carapana/Tatuyo, Macuna, Barasano/Taiwano and Waimaja/Bará. One Central Tucano language, Cubeo, also spoken on the Querarí river (a tributary of the Vaupés which constitutes the northern border of the Tucano area) and the Upper Aiari (see Barnes forthcoming and Aikhenvald forthcoming-b, for a further description of the Tucano language family). The East Tucano languages are closely related, but not mutually intelligible. The Tucano live along the Paca, Papurí, Vaupés and Tiquié rivers. In the Brazilian Vaupés, Tucano is gradually gaining ground as a lingua franca of the area.

Table 1, based on Grimes (1988), gives an idea of the numbers of those who identify themselves as belonging to East Tucano groups and to Tariana, and those who actually speak the corresponding language.

Table 1. The Brazilian Vaupés: languages and their speakers

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Ethnic Group</th>
<th>Tucano</th>
<th>Piratapuya</th>
<th>Guanano</th>
<th>Desano</th>
<th>Cubeo</th>
<th>Tuyuca</th>
<th>Tariana</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Language Speakers</td>
<td>4500</td>
<td>1232</td>
<td>1000</td>
<td>1800</td>
<td>3000</td>
<td>723</td>
<td>1500</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The three Makú languages spoken in the area are Dāw, Hupda-Yuhup and Kakua-Nukak (see Martins and Martins forthcoming).

Lingua francas spoken in the region are Língua Geral, or Nheengatu, and Tucano. Língua Geral is spoken in the whole region of the Upper Rio Negro (see Rodrigues 1986: 102, Bessa Freire 1983, Moore et al. 1994). On the Vaupés, it is only understood by older people.⁵ Língua Geral is a creolised version of Tupinambá (Tupí-Guaraní family) spread from the east coast of Brazil by white merchants and missionaries. It was the lingua franca of the whole Amazon region from the late 17th century up to the middle of the 19th century; its influence can still be seen in a few loan words in Tariana and other languages of the Vaupés (see §4.3, p.20). In the Vaupés area, it was gradually replaced by Tucano as a lingua franca.

³ A number of other Arawak languages of the Upper and Middle Rio Negro region became extinct during the 19th and 20th centuries, e.g., Manao, Wirina, Waimuma, Yumana, Passe, Yabaana, Mandawaca (Mawaca), Amarizana (Koch-Grünberg 1911), Bahwana; see Aikhenvald (forthcoming-a).

⁴ Due to these differences, Tariana and Baniwa of Içana are not mutually intelligible; however, speakers can easily recognize numerous cognates and understand simple things in each other’s languages. Baniwa does not belong to the Vaupés linguistic area; however, as I have shown elsewhere (Aikhenvald forthcoming-b), it displays a number of linguistic similarities with the languages of the Vaupés which may be indicative of older contacts.

⁵ Interestingly, the Tariana term for Língua Geral is *Ba
e, which implies that in the early days the Bare were identified with speakers of Língua Geral.
from the early 20th century, as a result of the language policy of Catholic missionaries and the civil authorities (cf. Story 10 below).

Indo-European languages are represented by Portuguese and Spanish. They are also gaining ground as lingua francas of the region, especially among younger people.6

3. Language attitudes and historical evidence.

3.1 Multilingualism and language attitudes. Multilingualism used to be — and to a great extent still is — a cultural norm over the whole Vaupés. Among the East Tucano peoples and the Tariana, marriage is exogamous. There are strict marriage rules, which are governed by language affiliation (see Sorensen 1967(1972), Aikhenvald 1996a). Marrying someone who belongs to the same language group is considered akin to incest. Jackson (1974: 62), referring to the linguistic attitudes of Bará, an East Tucano group of the Vaupés basin, reports being told: ‘My brothers are those who share a language with me’, and ‘We don’t marry our sisters’. Consequently language — which is acquired through patrilineal descent — is a badge of identity, together with the patrilineal descent. An Indian always identifies with their father’s tribe and language.

The main unit, both socially and linguistically, is a speech community, identified by one’s father’s language. Each settlement — whether longhouse or village — used to be traditionally multilingual because of these exogamous marriage rules. An individual generally knows between three and ten other languages of the region, including his mother’s language which would frequently coincide with his wife’s language, and in addition Portuguese and/or Spanish. Since language identity is a symbol of ethnic identity, languages — even the closest ones — are kept strictly apart (see Sorensen 1967(1972): 82). This creates a very strong impediment to lexical loans (in contrast to other multilingual situations, e.g., the village of Kupwar: Gumperz and Wilson 1971: 161-162).

Each tribe, identifiable by a distinct language (e.g. Tariana, Piratapuya, Tucano etc.), is divided into several subtribes, hierarchically organised depending on whether they are descendants of the first, second, third etc. son of an ancestor. The lower groups in the hierarchy are said to be ex-Makú, and called ‘underlings’, or ‘soldiers’, — due to the traditionally low status of the Makú groups in the Vaupés society. Their role is to serve the members of senior subtribes who are to be treated as elder brothers — for instance, lighting their cigars in the Cigar-smoking ritual (see §5.3.3). Each group — and apparently each subtribe — have their own versions of origin myths; there are dialectal differences between subtribes.7

The traditionally nomadic Makú peoples are not included in the marriage network; however, they are integrated into the economic exchange system — they produce arrow poison, and game, which they supply to the Tucano and the Tariana in exchange for the staple food, manioc (since they have no agriculture themselves). They are considered inferior by East Tucano and Tariana (see Martins 1994, Silverwood-Cope 1990) and do not intermarry with either East Tucano or Tariana. However, they do share a number of linguistic characteristics with other languages of the Vaupés region. They also share some important

6 The Yanomami — semi-nomadic hunters and gatherers who live in the jungle around the small tributaries of the Upper Rio Negro and sometimes travel as far westwards as the Vaupés region — are not culturally integrated with other peoples of the Upper Rio Negro, and do not form a part of the Içana-Vaupés linguistic area. They rarely interact with other tribes, being feared and avoided.

7 Janet Barnes (p.c.) reports that a ‘lower’ subtribe of Tuyuca which is said to have descended from the ‘tucanised’ Makú have a simpler system of evidentials than other Tuyuca varieties (cf. §4.2).
myths with the Tucano and the Tariana. Unlike the Tucano and the Tariana, they exhibit no inhibition against lexical loans (see Aikhenvald forthcoming-b).

Due to the obligatory multilingualism, there is a large degree of grammatical and phonological convergence among the indigenous languages of the Vaupés. The impact of these convergence phenomena is especially instructive in the case of Tariana. They are discernible as the result of ‘foreign’ influence, on comparing Tariana with Baniwa of Içana, a closely related North Arawak language. The linguistic diversity is accompanied by a lesser degree of cultural diversity — see §5.1.

3.2 Traditional evidence. There are indications that neither the Tucano nor the Tariana are the autochthonous population of the Vaupés (see Béteille 1998, on the complexity of the notion ‘indigenous’ population). According to Nimuendajú (1982: 168-171), the original inhabitants of the Vaupés area were the Makú tribes,8 and the East Tucano tribes entered the area later, from the West. The Tariana are the most recent arrivals; they must have come into the Vaupés basin from a tributary of the Içana river — probably, the Aiari (around the end of the 16th century according to Brüzzi 1977, Koch-Grünberg 1911, and Nimuendajú 1982). This migration route is reflected in Tariana myths, according to which the Tariana people originated from a ‘hole’ at the waterfall of Apui (Tariana Miaka-pani ‘the rapid of Apui, lit. the rapid of the old ones’ (ancient-CL:RAPID), on the Aiari river where they used to live together with the Baniwa, and with the Cubeo (also see Story 1 below). When the Tariana came out of the hole, covered with blood, they heard strong thunder;9 this explains the autodenomination of the Tariana as ‘Children of the Blood of Thunder’ (Tucano Büxpo di pôrá, Tariana Izi-ne (blood-PL)). Numerous stories about the wars between the Tariana and the Guanano, and between the Tariana and the Desano, provide ethnohistorical evidence concerning the Tariana invasion of the Vaupés (see Brüzzi 1977). The Desano, as the inhabitants of the main rivers, were among the first to have suffered from the invasion of the Tariana; according to Cândido Brito, as the result of the Desanos’ defeat, they became the ‘younger brothers’ of the Tariana — this is why the Tariana are not allowed to marry them.

The following tentative historical scenario can be suggested for the linguistic situation in the Vaupés during the past five hundred years.

(i) Before 1500: The East Tucano tribes moved from the east into the Vaupés area, which was previously inhabited by Makú tribes; the East Tucano established dominance over the Makú. (The spread of some Tucano-speaking peoples to the Içana basin may have occurred at about the same time: see Aikhenvald forthcoming-c). The Baniwa of Içana were then living together with the Tariana in the Içana basin.

(ii) Around 1600: the Tariana moved from the tributaries of the Içana river — thus splitting from the Baniwa of Içana — to the Vaupés region, in which the Tucano tribes were already established. This marked the beginning of the contact between East Tucano and Tariana; the contact between the Makú and the Tucano peoples was probably much older.

(iii) Around 1750-80: the first contacts with Portuguese took place — this started the spread of Língua Geral as a lingua franca.

(iv) Around 1900: Tucano started to gain ground as a lingua franca of the area, with some Tariana settlements beginning to use mainly Tucano (see §3.3). This tendency was exacerbated by the Salesian missionaries (who established themselves in the Vaupés in 1925)

---

8 It is usually assumed that a nomadic group of hunters and gatherers must be autochthonous, and more ‘advanced’ groups with agriculture must be newcomers (cf. Béteille 1998); however, there is no way in which this can be proved, especially in the area without any archeological support — like Northwest Amazonia.

9 According to another version, the Tariana appeared out of a drop of blood shed by their forefather, Thunder.
who considered the traditional multilingualism a kind of uncivilised ‘savagery’ and made a point of imposing a one-people-one-language policy through the system of boarding schools for children where only Tucano was used and all other languages were banned. This resulted in the growing endangerment of indigenous languages other than Tucano in the Vaupés region, as well as in almost complete obsolescence of Língua Geral.

Tariana place names (see Aikhenvald 1996c) constitute an important piece of evidence in favour of the comparatively recent character of multilingualism among the Tariana.10

Traditional Tariana place names fall into three groups: (i) names of places where Tariana live now, or have lived until recently — here called ‘actual’ place names; (ii) names of historical places associated with original dwelling sites and migrations of the Tariana — here called ‘historical’ place names, and (iii) names of places associated with traditional, strictly Tariana mythological characters and the creation of the world — here called ‘mythological’ place names.

These place names differ in quite a few important properties: whether they exist in the languages of the region, or just in Tariana; whether they are also named in Língua Geral or in Portuguese; and whether they are calque translations from one language to another if they have a name in languages other than Tariana. Finally, not all the place names have archaic features; not all of them can be derived from proper names. These properties are summarised in Table 2.

The ‘actual’ place names are calques in Tariana, Tucano and other East Tucano languages of the Vaupés. They are also translated into Língua Geral, or Portuguese; this is the name under which they appear on (Brazilian) maps. Thus, they reflect the actual linguistic situation — characterised by multilingualism — as well as the recent history, when Língua Geral was a lingua franca of the Vaupés. Some place names also have another, more recent name in Portuguese, often given by Catholic missionaries. Examples of these multilingual place names are given in Table 3.11

### Table 2. Properties of Tariana place names

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Property</th>
<th>‘Actual’ place names</th>
<th>‘Historical’ place names</th>
<th>‘Mythological’ place names</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Multilingual</td>
<td>yes</td>
<td>generally no</td>
<td>no</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Named in Língua Geral and/or Portuguese</td>
<td>yes</td>
<td>sometimes</td>
<td>no</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Calque translations</td>
<td>yes</td>
<td>no</td>
<td>no</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Derivations from proper names</td>
<td>no</td>
<td>no</td>
<td>yes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grammatical archaisms</td>
<td>none</td>
<td>possible</td>
<td>possible</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

10 Jackson (1983: 100) suggests that the obligatory multilingualism in the Vaupés basin could be quite recent, and that it could have arisen as the result of pressure from white colonizers, as a means of protecting the national identity of distinct, previously hostile groups which had been forced to interact with each other more than before the invasion. For the time being we do not have enough evidence to either prove or disprove this hypothesis.

11 A useful list of ‘actual’ place names in Tucano and Portuguese and in Língua Geral is given in Brüzzi (1977: 49-50). This list was corrected, and Tariana equivalents supplied by the Brito family. Some of these place names also occur in biographical stories told by the speakers.
Table 3. Examples of multilingual ‘actual’ place names

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tariana</th>
<th>Tucano</th>
<th>Língua Geral</th>
<th>Translation</th>
<th>Portuguese</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Yema-phe</td>
<td>uxtika-pušriš</td>
<td>none</td>
<td>leaf of tobacco (tobacco-CL:LEAF.LIKE)</td>
<td>Cigarro (old name) Nova Esperança (new name)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Iwi-taku</td>
<td>moá-noá</td>
<td>Juquira</td>
<td>point of salt</td>
<td>Juquira-ponta (old name: hybrid with Língua Geral); Santa Rosa (new name)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ikuzi-taku</td>
<td>ūhuri-pweá</td>
<td>none</td>
<td>rapid of turtle (jabuti-CL:RAPID)</td>
<td>Jabuti</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tuizi-taku</td>
<td>umūš-˘dá</td>
<td>none</td>
<td>point of pied crested oropendola</td>
<td>Japú-ponta</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mawa-keze</td>
<td>wōhō-nāxkāro</td>
<td>none</td>
<td>island of tirite (arumā vine)</td>
<td>Arumā</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Place names of this group have no grammatical archaisms (cf. Aikhenvald 1996b). A place is named after a plant which grows in the place, or its physical property. For instance, Yemaphe ‘Cigarro’ is a biggish settlement on the Vaupés known for growing tobacco, and Iwitaku ‘Juquira-ponta’, recently renamed Santa Rosa, is known for a plant used in traditional extraction of salt (it is the place where most Wamiarikune live now). Ikuzitaku ‘Jabuti’ (Portuguese ‘turtle’) is known for the concentration of turtles; Tuizi-taku, where one of the oldest speakers of Tariana, Cândido, was born, is known for the concentration of pied crested oropendolas, and Mawakeze is known for tirite (arumā vine), employed for making roofs. Both Tuizi-taku and Mawakeze are now abandoned (see §5.1, on the practice of abandoning villages).

‘Historical’ places are associated with sites where the Tariana lived in the ancient times and with their migrations; they figure in stories about the migrations of the Tariana, their subtribes and wars between them. Unlike ‘actual’ place names, ‘historical’ place names do not necessarily refer to places of settlements — instead, they often refer to memorable sites, such as stones or caves. These place names — exemplified in Table 4 — are mostly monolingual in Tariana. They ‘categorise’ the place with respect to its physical property, such as shape, or refer to an event which happened there, and contain linguistic archaisms. For instance, Masipiru-taku ‘the point of butterfly’ is a small peninsula on the Vaupés river which resembles a butterfly in its form, and Manaka-pina ‘valley of açai fruit’ is so named because of this type of fruit — the fruit of assai euterpe palm — which grows there. (It is not clear whether the Tariana have ever lived there, or only passed through these places on their journeys). Mawari-dapana ‘house of snake’ and Dazu-dapana ‘house of arara-parrot’ are names of caves which are believed to be inhabited by the spirits of the corresponding beings. Tuizi-keze ‘Island of pied crested oropendola’ (Portuguese japú) is named after one of the Tariana leaders, called Pied crested oropendola; the Tariana did live there before they fought the Guanano and went further up the Vaupés.

Table 4. Examples of monolingual ‘historical’ place names
place names | translation | comments
---|---|---
**Miaka-pani** | The rapid of ancients Rapid of Apui, where the Tariana originated |  

**Masipíz-taku** | The point of butterfly Peninsula on the Vaupés which the Tariana passed on their way from the Apui to the Vaupés |  

**Manaka-pina** | Valley of Açai fruit Valley on the Vaupés river which the Tariana passed when they first arrived on the Vaupés |  

**Mawazi-dapana** | House of snake Cave the Tariana passed on their way from the Apui to the Vaupés |  

**Dazu-dapana** | House of Arara-parrot Cave the Tariana passed on their way from the Apui to the Vaupés |  

**Tuiźi-keźe** | Island of Japũ-bird Island on the Vaupés where warfare with the Guanano took place |  

‘Mythological’ places are associated with traditional, strictly Tariana mythological characters, and the creation of the world. These names exist only in Tariana. They often have archaic features — such as archaic derivational suffixes and possessive markers. Only ‘mythological’ place names are sometimes derived from proper names (e.g. Kali-pani ‘the rapid of Kali’ in Table 5) — they usually refer to rapids, caves, stones, and hardly ever to settlements. They are often associated with an event which occurred in this particular place.

Table 5. Examples of ‘mythological’ place names.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>place name</th>
<th>translation</th>
<th>structure</th>
<th>comments</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Iniźi-yawa</strong></td>
<td>the hole of traira-fish</td>
<td>traira.fish-CL:HOLE</td>
<td>Place where the mythological traira fish hid the son of Kali, one of creators of the world</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Kali-pani</strong></td>
<td>the rapid of Kali</td>
<td>Kali-CL:RAPID</td>
<td>Place on the Querari river where Kali lived</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Kainiki-da</strong></td>
<td>the stone of manioc</td>
<td>manioc-CL:ROUND</td>
<td>The stone on the Querari river where Kali gave manioc to the first people (see Story 2)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Walizu-na</strong></td>
<td>the mountain of evil spirit</td>
<td>evil.spirit-CL:VERTICAL</td>
<td>Mountain on the Upper Rio Negro, near São Gabriel da Cachoeira, where Kali met his last wife, the daughter of Evil spirit (the mountain resembles a sleeping woman, and is popularly known as Bela Adormecida ‘Sleeping Beauty’) (see Story 2)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>I’ere-tapure</strong></td>
<td>spirit’s dream</td>
<td>spirit-dream-POSS</td>
<td>Island on the Papurí river where the Tariana’s forefathers dreamt about the future</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Izi-pua</strong></td>
<td>river of blood</td>
<td>blood-CL:RIVER</td>
<td>River where the enemies ate up the grandfather of the Tariana</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Place names referring to localities where Tariana live nowadays and to their historical migrations are multilingual, similar to ‘actual’ placenames. However, they are often not calque translations into the Tucano languages, and some of them do have archaic features (Aikhenvald 1996b). The most culturally important of these is Pa-whya-xe-pani (IMP-breathe-POSS-CL:RAPID) ‘The rapid of magic breath’, the Tariana name for the Ipanoré rapid — where some Tucano-speaking subtribes of the Tariana still live. According to the traditions of various East Tucano peoples (Buchillet 1994), they emerged from the rapid of Ipanoré. According to the Tariana tradition, Ipanoré was where all the East Tucano tribes came together and arrived at various agreements; since the Tariana arrived ‘late’, they did not receive their portion of ‘magic breath’ — believed to be the source of magic power — which went mostly to the Desano.

In a few cases where the Tariana still live in places associated with their historical migrations, these places may have two names in Tariana — one being a calque translation of a Tucano name, and the other being ‘Tariana proper’. One such example is Periquitos, which has two names in Tariana: Kekeke-xe-pani ‘rapid of a sparrow’, calqued from Tucano Ka¿-pweá ‘sparrow-rapid’, and Tupiya-rí-numana ‘the mouth of lizard’ (after the form of a bay in this place).

The most problematic place name of all is that of the Vaupés river itself. The name Vaupe (Uaupés), or Uape appears in several old lists of inhabitants of the Upper Rio Negro and Vaupés basin (Noronha in 1759, Sampaio in 1775, Ferreira in 1785, discussed in Brüzzi 1977:20ff), as a name of a tribe. No tribe with such name has been mentioned in later sources. It is still unclear whether the Uaupé were of a Tucano origin, as suggested by Brüzzi, or of an Arawak origin, or a mixture of both (see Wright 1992: 256). This name is not used by the indigenous population of the region, and is considered derogatory (Koch-Grünberg 1928; Bekstater p.c.). It bears a certain similarity to the name of a legendary tuchaua Tariana, Buopé, who led the Tariana in their settlement on the Vaupés; however, there is insufficient evidence to support this comparison (also see Brüzzi 1977: 28-29). The names of the Vaupés river in East Tucano languages, and in Tariana, are of different structure and of different origin. The Tucano people call this river Dya Poxsa ‘river of Makú’. This placename could be used as a piece of evidence in favour of the Makú being the first inhabitants of the region. (Note that there is another place, called Makwa \(i\), the river of Makú, in Tariana, a tributary of the Vaupés, close to Mitú in Colombia). The Tariana call the Vaupés Kaya \(i\); Arawak speaking groups of Baniwa of Içana call it Ukayá \(i\). That this is the same name is also corroborated by the rule of the loss of pretonic vowels in Tariana, cf. Baniwa apa-ita ‘one (animate), Tariana pa-ita; Baniwa a ña \(i\), Tariana ña \(i\) ‘man’. The etymology of this name is unclear. Brüzzi (1977: 13) suggests a derivation of Ucaya \(i\) from Baniwa, Tariana uni ‘water’ in combination with Baniwa kawa \(e\), Tariana ka \(e\) ‘wind’. This is not acceptable, because of the depletion uni > u which is unlikely; there is also no evidence in favour of a process w>y. Possibly, this name contains a suffix -a\(i\) used in hydronyms in Tariana. Tariana must have retained an older name of the Vaupés river, and did not adopt the Tucano one.

Hence the name ‘The rapid of magic breath’. This agrees with the hypothesis that the Tariana are indeed the most recent arrivals to the region.

Just one place name combines the properties of an ‘actual’, of a ‘historical’ and of a ‘mythological’ place name: Iauarete (Tariana Yawhipani, from a combination of Yawi ‘jaguar’ and the suffix -hipani ‘rapid’), named after the adventures of a mythological character Yawi-wa \(i\) (Jaguar-like one) who lived there and lost a battle to the forefathers of the Tariana. This name also contains an archaic suffix -hipani ‘rapid’ (cf. Baniwa of Içana hipani, hipana ‘rapid’); in spoken Tariana -hipani lost its initial syllable, and appears as a suffix -páni ‘rapid’ in place names. Iauarete is currently a large mission, a sort of semi-urban centre on the Vaupés whose population consists mainly of the Tucano-speaking Tariana.
The ‘monolingualism’ of ‘historical’ and ‘mythological’ place names — unexpected in an environment of obligatory multilingualism — suggests that the Tariana might have arrived in the Vaupés from a predominantly monolingual context, and that they have adopted multilingualism fairly recently.

The main consequence of the recent spread of the Tucano in the Brazilian Vaupés is the gradual undermining of the one-to-one identification between language and tribe. Language has gradually ceased to be an emblem of tribal identity, and the majority of languages other than Tucano have become endangered. The discrepancy between the number of those who belong to a tribe and those who actually speak the language is particularly marked in the case of Tariana (also see Story 10 below). The spread of Tucano is also leading to the gradual disappearance of one of the most fascinating multilingual areas of the world, and the areal phenomena associated with it.

3.3 Historical information about the Tariana, and their present state. The first information about the population of the Rio Negro and Vaupés, including the first mention of Tariana, goes back to the second half of the 18th century. The first source we have which gives some indication about the spread of the tribes of the Vaupés is ‘Roteiro da viagem da cidade do Pará até as últimas colonias dos domínios portuguezes em os Rios Amazonas e Negro’, by Vigário Geral, Dr. José Monteiro de Noronha (dated 1759: see Brüzzi 1977: 20-31). Another early source is ‘Diário da viagem que em visita e correição das povoações da Capitania de S. José do Rio Negro’, by Francisco Xavier Ribeiro da Sampaio (1774-1775) who mentioned the Tariana, the Desano, the Guanano and the Uaupé on the Vaupés, and on the Papurí river. He also was the first historian to have observed the existence of social hierarchies in the Vaupés region. Alexandre Rodrigues Ferreira (‘Diário da viagem Philosophica pela Capitania de S. José do Rio Negro’, in 1775-6), also signalled the Cariana (Tariana?) on the Papuri, and the Uaupé on the Vaupés river. Wallace (1853) mentions the Tariana in São Joaquim on the Vaupés river; and Martius (1867, vol.1: 567) noted the existence of the Tariana at São Jeronimo on the Vaupés — characterising them as ‘Nehmer, Räuber’ (‘takers, robbers’).

A detailed account of the spread and early history of contacts of the Tariana is given by Koch-Grünberg (1911: 49ff). He also points out the existence of two Tariana groups on the Vaupés: one in Ipanoré and the other in Iauarete. The report that the Tariana knew gold is repeated in several sources, contributing to the idea that the Tariana in particular were highly civilised and constituted a kind of elite among the indigenous population. According to Candido Brito, they indeed used to get gold from the Andes. Tariana has two words for gold which do not appear to be loans (hiwa ‘red gold’ and pa:ku ‘white gold’).

The Tariana (and other tribes of the Vaupés) were involved in the ‘rubber boom’ in the late 19th century. Hemming (1987: 315) describes the depopulation and depression of the whole region of the Upper Rio Negro in the mid-19th century, due to epidemics. When in...
1850 the province of Amazonas was separated from Pará, the attention of the governors of the new stage turned to the tributaries of the Upper Rio Negro, and among them the Vaupés (with its tributaries, the Tiquié and the Papuri), where there still was a considerable Indian population, among them the Tariana. This period is marked by numerous attacks by the government on the ‘nomadic’ tribes of the region, including the Hohôdene (Baniwa) and Makú. A new wave in baptism of the Indians started in 1852, with the appointment of Frei Gregório José Maria de Bene, who reportedly baptised a third of the estimated 2300 Indians in the Vaupés basin. Traders and governors used the rivalries between the tribes to capture Indian slaves; Indians were urged to leave their villages and to move to the main rivers. Wallace (1853) reports that the Tariana assisted in capturing Indians of other tribes for traders; it appears that the Tariana were used for these purposes because of their high status among Indians of the region (also see Hemming 1987:319).

According to Koch-Grünberg (1911:51), the Tariana language started to be ousted from everyday use in Iauarete as early as the beginning of the twentieth century. The gradual spread of Tucano as a lingua franca started at the end of the 19th century (Giacone 1962:7). This process was speeded up by Salesian missionaries, who were trying to fit the peoples of the Vaupés into the norm ‘one people - one language’. The tragic overtones of the ‘language loss’ among the Tariana is reflected in Story 10, The Tariana Language, told by Graciliano Brito.

At present, Tariana is a highly endangered language spoken in just two locations — Santa Rosa and Periquitos — by representatives of one subgroup, who call themselves Wa-miia-ziku-ne (1PL-only-AFF:LOCN-PL?) ‘the remaining ones’ (lit. we-the only ones) (see §4, and §5.2.1).  

4. The Tariana language

4.1 The names of the language. The Tariana refer to themselves as Ta-riá, Tariana or Tariana; here -na is a suffix used in names of people). Another autodenomination of the Tariana is Iri-ne (blood-PL) ‘the ones of the blood’; this name relates to the Tariana origin myth (see §3.2 and note 9). In Tariana, the Tariana language is referred to as waku ‘our speech’, or wa-yasu ‘our thing’, or ta-ri-yarupe ‘Tariana’s thing’. The Tucano-speaking Tariana do not use the term Iri-ne; calling the Tariana Diroa ‘blood’) (see Moreira and Moreira 1994).

16 ‘The male Tarianas of Yauareté speak only Tucano among themselves, which is the language of their mothers and daughters, since exogamy is strict in all the tribes of the Vaupés, i.e. a wife is taken from another tribe, very often from far away. However, when they go on a visit to other Tariana villages, at the reception and conversations, they use Tariana which is conceived as a more appropriate ceremonial language, a kind of ‘salon language’, whereas Tucano is used in everyday affairs or during trips. The younger generation has already forgotten many Tariana words, and this is the best proof that this sonorant language [i.e. Tariana] is gradually under way, whereas Tucano is spreading more and more, and has already become a kind of ‘Língua geral’ in the Lower and Upper Caiary-Vaupés and its tributaries Tiquié and Papuri, for tribes of different languages’ (Koch-Grünberg 1911: 51, my translation).

17 The Tucano-speaking Tariana still preserve some origin myths. Information from the Tucano-speaking Tariana groups is valuable for determining differences in myths and stories between subtribes; however it cannot be completely relied upon. An important work based on Kaline tradition (third group in Tariana hierarchy: see §5.2.1) is Moreira and Moreira (1994); however, one can only rely on what is confirmed by other sources (such as Brüzzi 1977; 1994; Biocca 1965; Amorim 1987; Stradelli 1890).

18 According to Brüzzi (1977: 100), this suffix could be a loan from Língua Geral.
Two other names are used to describe the Tariana in the literature.

(i) The denomination *I˜ene* (i~e-ne ‘evil spirit-PL’; lit ‘demons’) is a pejorative name for the Wamiarikune subgroup of the Tariana, given to the Wamiarikune ancestors by their envious ‘elder brothers’ because of their ‘impertinence’ (some of the controversies between the Wamiarikune and other Tariana subgroups are described in Story 1). Koch-Grünberg (1911) reported that the Yurupary-tapuya\(^{19}\) (‘people of the evil spirit’, in Nheengatu) — also known as *Iyäine*, or *iyemi* ‘evil spirits’ — used to be a ‘subtribe’ of Tariana which was very low on the tribal hierarchy (also see Coudreau 1886-1887, vol. 2: 160, 163).\(^{20}\)

(ii) The name *Yawi*, or *Yavi* ‘jaguar’ was mentioned by Coudreau (1886-1887, vol. 2: 474-6), and was — correctly — refuted by Koch-Grünberg (1911:50); this term is only used to refer to certain type of shamans (see §5.3.2, Table 9).

### 4.2 Previous studies of the language

The first short word lists in Tariana were collected by Wallace (1872/1853) and Martius (1867). Koch-Grunberg (1911) published a longish word-list, accompanied by a few phrases and a list of Tariana tribes — these data are very interesting, but are full of mistakes. Brüzzi (1961) published a reliable list of over hundred words in Tariana. Brüzzi (1977) presented a list of Tariana subtribes, their location, and a very detailed description of Tariana-Tucano cultural characteristics. A short sketchy grammar of Tariana was written by Giacone (1962), based on work with Anibal Muniz, from Periquitos (the grandfather of Eliseu Muniz: see above) conducted mostly in the thirties.\(^{21}\) Various aspects of the Tariana grammar have been discussed in my publications, in a typological, areal and historical perspective — see Aikhenvald (1994a, b, 1996a and forthcoming-a to h); a detailed reference grammar of Tariana (Aikhenvald in prep.) and a dictionary (Aikhenvald and the Brito family in prep.) are in preparation.

Little is known about the dialects of Tariana. The surviving varieties of the language — spoken in Santa Rosa and in Periquitos — display minor phonological and lexical differences; for instance, the initial \(d\) in cross-referencing pronominal prefixes in Santa Rosa corresponds to \(r\) in Periquitos. The Tariana of Periquitos are reported to ‘mix their language with Tucano’. It is likely that there were more dialectal differences in the past between the hierarchically organised subgroups of the Tariana (see §5.2.1); however, since the language is no longer spoken by most subgroups, this is impossible to prove.\(^{22}\)

The language spoken by the representatives of different generations displays significant morphosyntactic differences. The traditional narratives contain grammatical archaisms, such as switch-reference enclitic -kanada ‘after:DIFFERENT.SUBJECT’; unusual forms of the proximate demonstrative: feminine *huiška*, non-feminine *hiška*; and morphological causatives of some transitive verbs which refer to traditionally important activities performed during the Offering ritual or the Cigar-smoking ritual, e.g. -ˆapa ‘bless’, -sita ‘smoke’, -

---

\(^{19}\) Loukotka (1968:134) lists Iyäine, Yurupary-tapuya, and Kumandene (sic!) as one and the same tribe, distinct from the actual Tariana (which he also calls Yavi, following Coudreau).

\(^{20}\) This information has been confirmed by Padre Casimiro Bekssta (p.c.) and Rodrigues (1986: 68).

\(^{21}\) Like most works of this author, it is valuable as a historical source but contains numerous errors and misinterpretations. A longish word-list in Tariana was collected by Alva Wheeler in the early sixties (parts of it were published in Huber and Reed 1992). This list contains numerous errors and wrong translations. Since it was collected in the area of Ipanoré where Tariana ceased to be spoken long ago, the Britone, whom I asked to check Wheeler’s data, volunteered the explanation that he must have worked with a semi-speaker who had ‘fooled’ him.

\(^{22}\) According to Koch-Grünberg (1911: 51), there were dialectal differences between Tariana of Iauarete and Tariana of Ipanoré (when the language was still spoken there).
perita ‘lick’ — see §5.3.3. Stories about animals, or actual experiences of people in the jungle with evil spirits and so on, as well as some other stories recurrent in the region (e.g. Story 6) told by younger people are grammatically simpler and contain numerous Tucano-like patterns such as converbial clauses and participle constructions.

The Tariana are very aware of differences in the choice of lexemes and even grammatical morphemes by different generations. This is how Graciliano Brito put it: ‘There are several ways of speaking our language. We (the younger generation) speak it one way, and our father speaks it in another way, and when he tells us stories about how people were in the old days (payape-se-ne ‘long.ago-LOC-PL’), it comes out in yet another way’.

4.3 The linguistic profile of Tariana. Tariana combines a few features inherited from proto-Arawak, with areal influences from East Tucano, and some independent innovations. Independent innovations in Tariana include grammatical phenomena divergent from those found in closely related languages (e.g., Baniwa of Içana), but not explainable in terms of the influence of East Tucano languages. There has also been a certain amount of language attrition in phonology, grammatical structure and lexicon.

Tariana is highly polysynthetic, basically head-marking, but with elements of dependent-marking — the latter being due to Tucano influence (since most Arawak languages are entirely head-marking).

Tariana has 25 consonants and 6 vowels. There is a series of aspirated stops, and preaspirated nasals and a glide (historically derived from a sequence with h). One of the six vowels, I, is rare. The vowels a, i, e and u have long and nasal counterparts, while o has only a nasal counterpart. The emergence of I and o, the two vowels with a limited distribution, is most probably due to the Tucano influence.

Accent is contrastive and of a pitch type — another result of Tucano influence. There is an extensive set of phonological processes which operate within a morpheme and across affix boundaries, such as aspiration floating, h-metathesis and vowel fusion. At least some of them — such as nasalisation spread and the allophonic variation of d and z, y and ~ y and dy — are due to the influence of Tucano. Syllable structure is (C)V(h). Besides accent, transaryngeal vowel harmony, aspiration and nasalisation delimit the boundaries of a phonological word.

Similarly to most Arawak languages, Tariana has numerous suffixes and just a few prefixes. Many verbal and nominal categories are expressed with enclitics which, unlike suffixes, have a secondary stress; there are no phonological processes which apply across clitic boundaries.

Tariana has lost the proto-Arawak morphological split-ergativity marked through cross-referencing affixes — as retained in Baniwa of Içana and Warekena (see further discussion in Aikhenvald 1995b):

A=S—a - cross-referencing prefixes
O=S—o - cross-referencing enclitics

where A is the subject of a transitive verb, O is the object of a transitive verb, S—a is the subject of an intransitive active verb, S—o is the subject of an intransitive stative verb (see Dixon 1994: 70). Tariana has retained the proto-Arawak cross-referencing prefixes but lost the cross-referencing enclitics. Tariana does preserve the common Arawak division of verbs into transitive and intransitive active, which take prefixes cross-referencing A/S—a (these are also used to mark possessor on inalienably possessed nouns), and intransitive stative, which do not take cross-referencing markers. A/S—a/S—o expressed with an NP can be marked with ‘agentive’

23 The loss of cross-referencing enclitics is rather widespread in the Arawak languages, and is not necessarily related to language obsolescence (cf. the loss of cross-referencing enclitics in the Xinguan Arawak languages: Aikhenvald forthcoming-a).
case if it is in focus. Person, number and gender of A/S are neutralised in negative forms — marked with the prefix ma- and with the suffix -kade — since there is only one prefix position per verb. A third class of predicates — expressing feelings, physical states, etc. — does not take cross-referencing markers, and mark their subject with the non-subject case. A member of any word class can occupy the predicate slot, in which case they behave similarly to stative (prefixless) verbs. However, verbs have more morphological possibilities than members of other word classes used as predicates: for instance, only verbs can form imperatives.

Tariana verb has a vast array of meanings related to tense, aspect, mood and modality. Modalities include frustrative (‘do in vain’), apprehensive (‘lest’), and admirable. There are several dozen clitics used to describe varying facets of the action, some of which have highly specific meanings — they include ‘do early’, ‘spill water’, ‘wag a tail in a friendly manner’, ‘step on something and feel sharp pain’. Most of these originate in verbal roots, and were calqued from Tucano — see Aikhenvald (forthcoming-f).

Evidentiality is, cross-linguistically, one of the most unusual features of Tariana (cf. Aikhenvald and Dixon 1998). There are four evidential specifications which indicate the source of information obtained — visual, non-visual, inferred and secondhand. For instance, in describing an event such as ‘The jaguar killed a man’ use of the visual evidential would imply that the speaker saw this event happening. The non-visual evidential would be used if the speaker heard the noise of a man fighting the jaguar (or smelt the blood). The secondhand evidential would be used if someone told the speaker of the event, while the inferred evidential might be employed if the speaker had encountered a jaguar covered with human blood. Only visual, non-visual and inferred are distinguished in interrogative clauses.

A complicated system of serial verb constructions is used to express aspectual, directional and other meanings (see Aikhenvald forthcoming-d). The causative serial verb constructions are typologically quite unusual — both verbs (which have different agents) are marked for the same subject; this is shown in (1).

(1) du-a  du-h^a  iäiri-nuku
3sgf-make 3sgf-eat man-TOP.NON.A/S
‘She fed (lit. make-eat) the man.’ (lit. she-made she-ate the man).

Tariana also has a passive derivation (which is strikingly similar to the passive in Tucano), and several types of causatives. When a number of clauses are put together, each subordinate clause is marked for ‘same subject’, or for ‘different subject’; this switch-reference marking is very similar to that found in the Tucano languages (cf. Ramirez 1997: 264; Barnes forthcoming).

Besides verbs, nouns and derived adjectives are also open classes, while underived adjectives form a closed class (with about 30 members). Adjectives share some properties with nouns, some with stative verbs, and have some properties of their own. Adverbs and time-words are semi-closed classes. Closed classes include demonstratives, interrogatives-distributives, quantifiers etc. The most unusual of these is the gestural deictic khi ‘this size’ which involves an actual demonstration of the shape or size of an object.

Unlike in most languages of the world, nouns in Tariana are not only derivationally, but also inflectionally complex. They can take up to 15 structural positions (one of which is a prefix position). These include classifiers, tense (future and past), extralocality, contrastitivity, cases and various other affixes. (2) exemplifies an inflectionally complex noun (see Aikhenvald forthcoming-h) (- indicates affix boundaries, = stands for clitic boundaries).

(2) nu-phe-ru-ma-pe=yana-pe=tupe=miki-ite=ne=se=misini=nuku
The highly polysynthetic structure of Tariana nouns is an independent innovation of the language (neither Arawak, nor Tucano languages have this property).

Tariana has a very complicated system of over forty classifiers which are used as noun class markers, noun classifiers, numeral classifiers and verbal classifiers; a slightly different system of classifiers is used with modifiers from closed classes (see Aikhenvald forthcoming-i). Example (3) illustrates a classifier -dapana ‘house, habitat’ (underlined) with an adjective, a numeral, on a demonstrative, in a possessive construction, and on a verb:

(3) ha-dapana pa-dapana pani-si  
DEM:INAN-CL:HAB one-CL:HAB house-NPOSS
nu-ya-dapana hanu-dapana
1sg-POSS-CL:HAB big-CL:HAB
heku na-ni-ni-dapana-mahka  
wood 3pl-make-TOP.ADV-CL:HAB-REC.P.NON.VIS.

‘This one big house of mine is made of wood.’

An item is often introduced with a noun, and then referred to with a classifier throughout a narrative — in this way classifiers are more frequent in discourse than actual nouns.

The two-way gender opposition (feminine vs. the rest) is used in personal pronouns (just for third singular and all the plural forms) and verbal cross-referencing. Classifiers are virtually an open class, since any noun with an inanimate referent can be used as a ‘repeater’ (or ‘self-classifier’). Repeaters can be used to mark agreement with a topical noun; grammaticalised classifiers are used for unmarked agreement. Slightly different sets of classifiers are used with members of closed classes (see Aikhenvald 1994a).

Tariana distinguishes alienable and inalienable possession which interacts with possessive classifiers. Tariana has lost some elements of possession marking found in almost every Arawak language — the non-possessed forms of body parts and kinship nouns and the possessive suffixes on alienably possessed nouns. Traces of possessive suffixes are found in archaic ‘mythological’ placenames (see p. 14 on Pawhya xepani).

The Tucano influence on Tariana noun morphology can be illustrated with phenomena present in East Tucano and absent from other Arawak languages of the region — such as vocative forms of kinship nouns, use of classifiers with demonstratives, analytic marking of kinship possession, a three-term number system for nouns with an inanimate referent (collective, or unmarked, singular and plural), and special plural forms for kinship nouns.

Tariana acquired its case marking under the Tucano influence (see Aikhenvald 1996a, forthcoming-b,c). Personal pronouns with an animate referent distinguish subject and non-subject cases. Any non-subject topical constituent is marked with an enclitic -nuku. A focalised subject is marked with a suffix -ne, which developed from instrumental/comitative -ne; the two morphemes, however, are synchronically distinguishable: cf. nuha-ne (I-AG) ‘I (as a focussed subject)’, nu-ine (1sg-INS) ‘with me’. One case (-se) covers all the locational meanings (locative, directional, elative). These case markers are optional and can combine with the marker -nuku ‘non-subject topical constituent’ if the constituent is topical (thus yielding a peculiar instance of ‘double case marking’: see Aikhenvald forthcoming-h).

Most North Arawak languages — like most other South American Indian languages — avoid sentences with two full NPs, especially when one of them is a free pronoun. Free
pronouns are mainly restricted to emphatic function. In contrast, Tariana, similarly to the East Tucano languages, makes wide use of personal pronouns.

There has been considerable structural levelling of Tariana to accord with East Tucano syntactic structures and discourse techniques. A striking feature of syntactic organisation of the languages of the Vaupés is a strong verb-final tendency; this is found in East Tucano, in Tariana, and in the Makú languages of the area. Other North Arawak languages of the region show a verb-medial tendency.

Unlike other North Arawak languages, Tariana and Tucano tend to use a ‘resuming’ phrase: ‘so he/she/they did’ at the beginning of a new paragraph; e.g. Tucano tojo (so) wee-gI (do-3sg.masc), Tariana kay di-ni (so 3sg.non.fem-do) ‘then, thus, and so, lit. so he did’ is used to point out a consequence, or the result of an action.

Tariana and Tucano have long chains of juxtaposed clauses, and use relative verbal forms (‘participle’) to mark the predicate of a subordinate clause. Other North Arawak languages prefer sequencing verbal clitics (similar to medial verbs in Papuan languages, cf. Aikhenvald 1995a, 1998b and forthcoming-b, on sequencing clitics in Bare and Warekena). Tariana also uses the sequential clitic -ka, to mark the predicate of a complement clause (and this is used most often in narratives told by old speakers).24 Thus, Tariana combines both ‘Tucano-like’ and ‘North-Arawak-like’ strategies of complementation.

Tariana has also undergone a number of lexical shifts under East Tucano influence; for instance, one word — ke:ri — is used to refer to both ‘sun’ and ‘moon’, similar to muhipu $ in Tucano. Other North Arawak languages have two distinct words for these, e.g. Baniwa of Içana ke:ji ‘moon’, kamui ‘sun’. Tariana izi ‘blood’ has acquired the meaning of ‘sap’ (hence: rubber, plastic) under the influence of East Tucano $di.25 Other North Arawak languages have different words for ‘blood’ and ‘sap’, e.g. Baniwa of Içana izi ‘blood’, dzeka ‘sap, rubber, plastic’ (see Aikhenvald 1996a).

Tariana has also lost some important semantic oppositions present in Baniwa but absent from Tucano. One such example are the words for ‘dying’. Baniwa has two words for ‘die’: an Sa verb -dzami ‘to die as the result of an illness; to be (terminally) ill’ and Sii verb maziu-me ‘to die suddenly’. Tariana has only the cognate of the first one, -yâmi. (The root mazie- is preserved only in mazierí ‘a type of shaman’: see Table 9). Tucano languages have also just one verb ‘to die’.

Numerous identical derivations in Tucano languages and Tariana involve loan cultural items; these include ‘hospital’, ‘watch’, ‘plane’, ‘airstrip’, e.g. Tucano Ithko-wi’i (medicine-house) ‘hospital’, Tariana di-tape-dapana (3sgnf-medicine-CL:HOUSE) ‘hospital’, Guanano pahia nomia, Tariana pai isadu ‘nun; lit. father-woman/wife’. Tariana terms for ‘father’ and ‘mother’ underwent ‘levelling’ in agreement with Tucano patterns. In Baniwa the word for mother is -ha-dua, where -dua is a feminine suffix also found in other kinship terms, such as -kesi-dua (relative-feminine) ‘female relative’. The Baniwa word for father is -ni:j. In Tucano languages ‘father’ and ‘mother’ have the same root, and contain masculine and feminine suffixes, e.g. Tucano pa-cI $ ‘father’, pa-cô ‘mother’; Cubeo jipa-cI ‘father’, jipa-co ‘mother’. In Tariana, the term for ‘mother’ is (-)ha-dua; it contains the root -ha and the feminine suffix -dua (both are cognate with Baniwa). The term for ‘father’, -ha-nizi, is the

24 A subordinating enclitic -ka is also found in four East Tucano languages (Carapana, Tatuyo, Waimaja and Yuruti); it is not clear whether or not it was spread by contact.
25 Distinct words for ‘blood’ and ‘sap’ are found in West Tucano languages Siona, Secoya and Koreguaje, and in Central Tucano Tanimuca-Retuama and in Cubeo. Dâw and Hupda-Yuhup also use just one term for ‘moon, sun’; whereas Nadêb has two different words (see Aikhenvald 1996a).
result of a reanalysis: -ha- is the same root as that found in ‘mother’, while -niri — historically a cognate of Baniwa term for ‘father’— is effectively a masculine suffix. This suffix is also used in a number of kinship terms, such as -sa-niri (spouse-MASC) ‘husband’, uphe-niri (underlying form: upi-ha-niri: before-father-MASC) ‘widower’. Thus, the pair ‘father’ - ‘mother’ has the same morphological structure in Tariana and in the Tucano languages: parent-masculine and parent-feminine respectively.

As mentioned above, the languages of the Vaupés area have a strong cultural inhibition against lexical loans viewed as ‘language mixing’ (a ‘crime’ comparable to incest). However, this does not mean that loanwords are non-existent, only that they are few. A few loanwords from Lingua Geral probably came into Tariana in the end of the 19th century, e.g. Tariana -bue-ta ‘teach, learn’ (Nheengatu yumu$s ‘teach, learn’), yarana ‘white man’ (Nheengatu yara ‘master’), suzara ‘soldier, underling’ (Nheengatu surara ‘soldier’) (Nheengatú data are from Tatevin 1910). The few Tucano loans include tôke$s ‘firefly’, -besita ‘choose’, -boleta ‘defeather’, -bata ‘swing’. The only preposition te ‘until’ (also used as a subordinating conjunction) could be an old borrowing from Portuguese até ‘until’.

Tariana is an obsolescent language, since it is not being learnt by children. The younger generation of Tariana speakers prefer to use Tucano when speaking among themselves or to their wives. They consistently use Tariana only when speaking to the members of their father’s family. In phonology, the language attrition phenomena in Tariana are reflected in excessive variability of certain inherited phonemes with a low functional load. In particular, aspirated stops, nasals and bilabial glide alternate with their unaspirated counterparts. Long vowels tend to freely interchange with short vowels. There is also a considerable degree of variation and hypercorrection in applying phonological boundary processes.

In morphology, there are some signs of reduction. The irregular possessive form of the inalienably possessed pani-si ‘house’, i.e. -pana (present in every North-Arawak language of the region: Aikhenvald forthcoming-c), is tending to fall out of use. Panisi ‘house’ is treated as alienably possessed; note that the word for ‘house’, wi‘i, is alienably possessed in East Tucano languages. Irregular nu-pana is replaced by a construction with a possessive classifier, e.g., one frequently hears nu-ya-dapana (1sg-POSS-CL:HAB) instead of nu-pana. The latter form is acknowledged as acceptable but only rarely used. Some speakers tend to treat the noun panisi as inalienably possessed. The form nuha panisi ‘my house’ (i - house) can sometimes be heard. Some verbal categories are falling out of use; for instance, the reciprocal/reflexive -kaka is rarely used by younger people (who prefer to use a serial verb construction instead — Aikhenvald forthcoming-e). Its use with a reflexive meaning has been almost completely forgotten. In addition, the competence of speakers differs as far as the aspect, aktionssart and switch-reference marking clitics are concerned.

Syntactic reduction is rather drastic. A Tucano-like clause chaining strategy with the predicate of the subordinate clause in participle form tends to oust the Arawak-like one, with sequential forms of predicates of subordinate clause. Cleft constructions bear the influence of Portuguese ‘it is me who...’, with an interrogative pronoun.

Lexical obsolescence and loss differ from one speaker to another. All the speakers had difficulties in remembering kinship terms for cousins and uncles, especially the suppletive and semi-suppletive vocative forms. Descriptive terms were often used for birds and animals, and their ‘right’ names were remembered later. Lexical obsolescence goes together with the obsolescence of cultural knowledge (such as traditional sacred names: see §5.3.5).

5. Cultural background. Here I summarise the main facts concerning the traditional life and beliefs of the Tariana. §5.1 discusses the environment, means of subsistence and material culture. The social organisation, kinship and marriage system are dealt with in §5.2. Religion, taboos, initiation and other ceremonies are considered in §5.3.
5.1 Environment, means of subsistence and material culture. On the Vaupés, the Tariana and the Tucano speaking peoples live in several discontinuous areas, along the main river and its tributaries. They display great cultural similarity, and a complicated network of interrelations by marriage (see Sorensen 1967/1972, Jackson 1974, 1976, Aikhenvald 1996a). This cultural homogeneity in the Vaupés is realised through (a) shared means of subsistence, food and ways of life, as well as (b) shared stories and rites, and traditional social structure, with a minimal division of ‘labour’ between tribes (see Galvão 1979, for the differences in pottery and basket-weaving techniques between Tucano and Arawak-speaking groups).

All the Vaupés tribes, with the exception of the Makú, are sedentary. Descent is strictly patrilineal, and the main means of subsistence is slash-and-burn agriculture, hunting and fishing. The shifting of a dwelling place (presumably due to the exhaustion of the soil) used to happen about once a generation. The old place was usually abandoned, with the population of its longhouse moving to another location. The ostensive reason for movements was said to be ‘sorcery’, or ‘evil breath’ (Tariana hiwyasi, breathe-NOM) of enemy shamans. For instance, Tuirkitaku, also known as Japú-ponta (see Table 3), was the place where the Britos lived before. They then moved to Iwi-taku (Juquira-ponta, also known as Santa Rosa) because ‘someone had opened a pot of fever (adaki-aphi ‘fever-CL:HOLLOW) with their evil breath, and people started dying’.

In the Vaupés cultural area the main means of subsistence is bitter manioc; its preparation is women’s responsibility. During the dry season men clear and burn parts of forest to make new gardens — usually of a round shape. Every married woman has a garden of her own, and she shares the products of her garden with those who helped her clear and burn it. Bitter manioc is harvested, soaked in pools, or rivers, for a few days, then grated and pushed through a cylindrical squeezer (hizina) to extract the poisonous ‘juice’. Manioc flour is prepared with large round sieves (yupiži). It is then roasted to produce manioc flour, used for baking manioc bread (pe:the) and making a kind of manioc broth, i.e. manioc flour mixed with water (kawhi napusutanipe ‘mixed manioc flour’, Portuguese chibé).

Men are responsible for getting protein, i.e. for hunting and fishing, while women look after children, sweep the inside of houses, gather food from gardens and from the jungle and do the cooking. Men help women make gardens, do the ceremonial cooking (of meat) and build houses. Women often accompany their husbands on long fishing or hunting expeditions which last for several days (described with a serial verb construction as dima di-h `a di-emhani, lit. he slept, he ate, he walked, — see §5.3.4, on taboos associated with their success).

Indians forage in the forest, and also plant various fruit trees, e.g. pineapples, bananas, açaí (fruit of the assai euterpe palm, Euterpe oleracea), mirití (fruit of the fiber mauritia palm, Mauritia flexuosa), pupunha (fruit of the spiny peachpalm, Guilielma speciosa), bacaba (fruit of palms of genus Oenocarpus, Oenocarpus distichus), umari (fruit of the spiny andira, Andira spinulosa), and ingá (fruit of Inga, from mimosa family). Açaí, bacaba, and pupunha are used to prepare sweet, mildly alcoholic beverages. A culturally important traditional

---

26 The cultural homogeneity of the Vaupés region has been pointed out by almost all the scholars and lay observers who have visited it (e.g., Goldman 1948, Goldman 1979; Reichel-Dolmatoff 1971, Sorensen 1967(1972), Brüzzi 1977; Biocca 1965, Jackson 1974, 1976, Galvão 1979). Detailed descriptions of the material and spiritual culture of the Tucano-speaking peoples in the Vaupés can be found in Brüzzi (1977), S. Hugh Jones (1979), C. Hugh-Jones (1979), Jackson (1983) and Reichel-Dolmatoff (1971, 1986).

27 The Tariana term for an abandoned settlement is panisa\u (panisi ‘house’ plus suffix -a\u).

28 This area could be extended to comprise the basin of the Içana river — see the discussion in Aikhenvald (forthcoming-b and c).
beverage, caxiri (*payatu*) — made from different sorts of manioc and fermented with saliva (see Brüzzi 1977; Harner 1984) — is consumed during the feasts which accompany the clearing of the forest and burning the cleared patches for new gardens; caxiri is also used at ‘offering’ feasts (see §5.3.3). Further traditional foods include banana mash (*umuku*, Portuguese *mingão*) and pepperpot sauce (*āsyapi*, Portuguese *quinhapira*). Numerous varieties of edible leaf-cutting ants are considered a great delicacy.

The structure of the Tariana year (*kamu*) is shown in Table 6. The year is divided into 20 periods (called *keːri* ‘moon, sun’, or *keːri-pi* (moon-CL:LONG)) linked to flood or drought, the appearance of stars and constellations, and, possibly, phases of the moon. They are divided into four groups: 1-12 relating to the ‘big flood’, or wet season (when the food is plentiful); 13-14 for the short ‘dry season’ (when the food is getting scarce); 15-16 relating to a short ‘flood’ (when the food is very scarce); and 17-20 for another dry season when food is getting more plentiful. These periods are not fixed — for instance, one ‘month’, *yuuru-kamu*, usually coincides with a part of August, but may extend into September.

In hunting and fishing, the Tariana use animal traps (*nawetanipe*), and fish nets (*mepuku*, Portuguese *cacuri*). Fish are often stunned with fish-poison (*kuna*) and then caught with fish-baskets (*tudā, Portuguese *puçá*); the same baskets are used to catch fish during periods of spawning. Fish and game are preserved by being smoked. Fishing with traps is usually done at night. Men employ blow-gun and bow; arrows are tipped with the poison curare (manufactured by the Makú). Women weave baskets and hammocks out of cotton or tucum plant, and make ceramic pots. Tucano-type pots — made out of clay (*suzupe, Portuguese *tuyuca*) found along the river banks, or river beds (Brüzzi 1977: 165) — are black, not oxygenised and usually undecorated. In contrast, the Baniwa make more sophisticated white pots with red paintings on them. Ceramic ‘ovens’, or frying pans (*puazi, Portuguese *forno*) are also made out of clay by women. The Tariana and the Tucano employ the same wood-working techniques for making canoes and paddles. Benches (*eːdi, Portuguese *banco Tucano*) — made exclusively by the Tucano — are manufactured of a single piece of wood, and painted in red or black. The peoples of the Vaupés area and the Baniwa produce a similar kind of flutes, and other ritual objects — such as cigar-holders (*yemapu*: see §5.3.3, p. 35): they also share long flutes used at the offering feast (*yapuruatu*), and smaller flutes which consist of several separate parts (*karisu*).
### Table 6. Traditional divisions of the year

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>name</th>
<th>translation</th>
<th>approximate time</th>
<th>characteristics</th>
<th>season</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. ye:</td>
<td>Armadillo</td>
<td>Mid-February</td>
<td>Beginning of wet season; abundance of edible leaf-cutting ants (<em>kasitezu, da@ne, pisi</em>)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. ya@ka</td>
<td>Shrimp</td>
<td>End February to mid-March</td>
<td>Fish start spawning, edible frogs (<em>pai@i</em>) sing</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. yawi i-ziinuma</td>
<td>Jaguar’s mouth (jaguar INDF-mouth)</td>
<td>Mid-March to early April</td>
<td>Fish are spawning, rivers are full, rain alternates with heat</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. yawi makite</td>
<td>Whole jaguar (jaguar large+CL:AN)</td>
<td>Early April to mid-April</td>
<td>Fish spawn, rivers are flooded</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. hyupaki izi</td>
<td>Son of a spade (spade INDF+son)</td>
<td>Mid-April to early May</td>
<td>Edible frogs sing, there is plenty of fish, it is rainy and muddy</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. hyupaki</td>
<td>Spade</td>
<td>Early May to mid-May</td>
<td>Fish is getting more scarce</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. kuphe-kayama-ze</td>
<td>Smoking grid for fish (fish-smoking.grid-POSS)</td>
<td>Mid-May to late May</td>
<td>It is still raining; fish stop spawning; there are no frogs; time to fish white aracú (<em>tari</em>) in small ponds.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8. walipe izi</td>
<td>Son of Walipe (Pleades)</td>
<td>End of May to mid-June</td>
<td>Drizzle, there are waves of cold, sloths appear.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9. walipe</td>
<td>Pleiades</td>
<td>Mid-June to last ten days of June</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10. ˘ewi</td>
<td>Otter</td>
<td>Last ten days of June to early July</td>
<td>It rains a little; one star of the constellation called ‘Otter’ appears</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No.</td>
<td>Term</td>
<td>Description</td>
<td>Season</td>
<td>Notes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----</td>
<td>---------------</td>
<td>---------------------------</td>
<td>-----------------</td>
<td>----------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>.retry i-puna</td>
<td>Road of an otter</td>
<td>Early July to</td>
<td>A little rain; another star of the constellation of ‘Otter’ appears</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>(otter INDF-road)</td>
<td>mid July</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
<td>3are</td>
<td>Scorpion</td>
<td>Mid-July to</td>
<td>The wet season ends; one starts work in the gardens</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>late July</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No.</td>
<td>Event/Activity</td>
<td>Time of Year</td>
<td>Description</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------</td>
<td>-----------------------------------------------------</td>
<td>---------------------</td>
<td>---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13.</td>
<td><em>yu</em>-<em>ru</em>-kamu, *pana-*re</td>
<td>Around August</td>
<td>Cicada sings; one hunts paca and curassow. There are some fish. One burns and cleans sites for future gardens and starts planting. Kamu-yapi (heat-cycle) ‘dry season’; (little food)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14.</td>
<td><em>ma:</em>-<em>ri</em></td>
<td>Around September</td>
<td>No fish; it starts raining a little.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15.</td>
<td><em>pisya:</em>-<em>ri</em></td>
<td>Around October</td>
<td>Black leaf-cutting ants come; there are just a few fish.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16.</td>
<td><em>a:</em>-<em>pi</em>, <em>a:</em>-<em>pya:</em>-<em>ri</em></td>
<td>Around November</td>
<td>Toads called <em>mu:</em>-<em>ritu</em> start singing; it rains, and fish are scarce. U-<em>ane</em> ‘wet season’ (also called ‘small wet season’) (little food)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17.</td>
<td><em>hawa:</em>-<em>y</em>-kamu</td>
<td>December</td>
<td>Rain dries up; best time to make gardens; time for ingá-fruit.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18.</td>
<td><em>pi:</em>-<em>pi:</em>-<em>ri</em></td>
<td>Early to mid-January</td>
<td>Dry season; time to harvest pupunha, cucura and small cucura.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19.</td>
<td><em>ka:</em>-<em>ma:</em>-<em>he:</em>-<em>ru-</em>-<em>ri</em></td>
<td>Mid to late January</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20.</td>
<td><em>y</em>:-<em>espu:</em>-<em>ri</em></td>
<td>Early to mid-February</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Traditional garments were abandoned by the Tariana in the early 1930s. Men used a penis-cover (*paramari*) made of tururi-bark; women used a short apron adorned with seeds (*kudama*). Especially elaborate garments were used for celebrations, when both men and women also used longish aprons, adorned with paintings and seeds (*paramazikha*). Traditional male adornments included an elaborate headdress made of tall parrot feathers (*daruphema*) and a headdress made of smaller feathers (*talamu*), as well as necklaces made of long and flat seeds (*yakasolo*) and of jaguar teeth (*yawiyehka* (jaguar-tooth-CL:CURVILINEAR)). Nowadays women use skirts; older women, especially in the Colombian parts of the Vaupés and in some non-Protestant villages of the Içana, do not wear tops.

Table 7 features the division of the day in Tariana. In the olden days, people used to get up and bathe in the small hours (*halite ipeya*). There was just one large meal, usually towards the end of the afternoon, with frequent snacks at other times. Numerous taboos concern behaviour at night and especially at midnight (*de:pi pamu`a*) when the evil spirits (Table 10) are believed to be dangerously active.

### Table 7. Structure of the day in Tariana

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Time</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>halite ipeya</em></td>
<td>‘small hours: before light’ (3-4 a.m.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>halia dinu</em></td>
<td>‘when it becomes light, and Venus appears’ (lit. ‘light comes’) (5-6 a.m.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>halia di`u dinu</em></td>
<td>‘when it becomes lighter, after Venus is in the sky’ (lit. ‘light goes up’)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>halia diwasa</em></td>
<td>‘it is almost fully light’ (lit. ‘light jumps’) (6 a.m.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>halia diswa</em></td>
<td>‘the dawn has broken’ (lit. ‘light has settled’)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>hekwa</em></td>
<td>‘near midday’ (around 11 a.m.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>hekwa ma`a</em></td>
<td>‘midday’ (around noon)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>hekwa ipumi</em></td>
<td>‘afternoon’ (1-2 p.m.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>de:kina, daiki</em></td>
<td>‘afternoon’ (3 p.m.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>de:kina wika</em></td>
<td>‘late afternoon’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>dainu</em></td>
<td>‘general term for the light part of the day’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>kadawas diswa</em></td>
<td>‘when it starts getting dark’ (lit. ‘darkness settles down’)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>de:pita</em></td>
<td>‘beginning of the night’ (getting darker)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>de:pi</em></td>
<td>‘night’ (general term for the dark part of the day)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>de:pi pamu`a</em></td>
<td>‘middle of the night’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The longhouse (Tariana *panisi*, Tucano *wi`i*) is a permanent building, thatched with the leaves of caraná palm (*Mauritia carana*; also see Brüzzi 1977: 158-160). An alternative name for a longhouse in Tariana is *na-xapa-ni-dapana* ‘dancing house’ (Tucano *baxsá-wi`i* ‘dancing house’). Its structure, with the name for each part, is shown in Diagram 1. A house is divided into four main ‘rooms’, referred to with a classifier -dawa ‘CLASSIFIER:ROOM’ (see Aikhenvald 1994b). There is one ‘room’ for unmarried men, one for unmarried women, and two large divisions for married couples. In the middle of the house there is a large fireplace where the communal food is cooked (see Reichel-Dolmatoff 1971, on the importance of sharing food in the Vaupés culture). There are two separate entrances, one for

---

29 According to the account by Galvão (1979:169), traditional longhouses were rectangular, with a round roof. The structure of a traditional Tucano-style longhouse was outlined by C. Hugh-Jones (1979:47); the earliest descriptions of longhouses in Iauarete and on the Içana were given by Koch-Grünberg (1909-10, 1:69, 284, 323).
men, and one for women. The dead were traditionally buried inside the house, next to the door (cf. Harner 1984: 167, on similar practices among the Jivaro).  

A temporary hut (talíma, known as tapiri in regional Portuguese) — a small non-permanent house built for spending a night in the jungle during a hunting expedition — consists of four poles, for hanging hammocks, with a leaf covering, and is reminiscent of bark shelters used as houses by the Makú, or by the Australian Aborigines.

The furniture consists of hammocks (amakú) and of Tucano-style benches (e:di). Hammocks are used for sleeping at night and sitting or dozing during day. To make love, spouses or lovers go to a woman’s garden (if she has one); otherwise they do it in a hammock (thus, the verb kwa ‘hang’ is also used with the meaning ‘sleep together’).

5.2 Social organisation. Kinship and marriage

5.2.1 Social organisation. Descriptions of the social organisation of the peoples of the Vaupés area can be found in Goldman (1979), C. Hugh-Jones (1979), S. Hugh-Jones (1979), Sorensen (1967/1972), Jackson (1974, 1976, 1983); Galvão (1979), and Brüzzi (1977); additional information was obtained from my Tariana teachers and various other people of the region (including some non-Tariana-speaking Tariana).

The traditional settlement patterns were multifamily longhouses and patrilineal sibs. As mentioned above, the process of replacing traditional longhouses by individual family houses began in the Brazilian part of the Vaupés region in the 1920s. There are no longhouses left in Brazilian territory; a local descent group is now necessarily split into Western-type nuclear families.

As was said above, each tribe, identifiable by a distinct language (e.g. Tariana, Piratapuya, Tucano etc.), is divided into several subtribes hierarchically organised depending on whether they are descendants of the first, second, third etc. son of the ancestor (see below). The lower groups in the hierarchy are sometimes said to be ex-Makú; exogamous marriages are preferably arranged between hierarchically equivalent groups. Historically, the Tariana

---

30 This practice was abandoned by the Tariana a few generations ago; it is still preserved in some Baniwa villages (Candelário da Silva, p.c.).

31 The basic units are classified by Jackson (1974, 1976) as (i) local descent groups, which includes one’s co-agnates and would usually occupy the same longhouse; (ii) sibs, i.e. named groups which would occupy one or more longhouses/settlements along the river; (iii) language groups (aggregates), or ‘tribes’, where the membership is determined by the rules of patrilineal descent, and members share a ‘father’s language’; (iv) phratry is an unnamed unit of various language-aggregates; members of a phratry do not intermarry and call each other ‘brothers’.
consisted of ten such subgroups. Different subtribes used different sets of sacred names ('blessing names': see §5.3.5); there are also differences in at least some origin myths.32 Since the language has been lost by all the subtribes except one, the Wamia-ikune, it is now impossible to know whether there had ever been any dialectal differences between the groups.

32 For instance, in the story of the origin myth by descendants of a senior subtribe, Kaline, reflected in Morreira and Morreira (1994) and Biocca (1965), Tariana forefathers were alternately two and three, while in the version told by the Wamia-ikune they were always two.
Diagram 1. The structure of a Tariana longhouse.
Numbers refer to different parts of the house; they are explained below by the Brito family.

1: äía na-kwa-ni-dawa äía ma-sa-do-peni na-kwa
‘A ‘room’ where men hang in hammocks. Unmarried men hang in hammocks’

2: pani-si i-wa-da-se i:na ma-sa-nizi-peni nakwa
‘Inside the house unmarried women hang in their hammocks’

3, 4: hi-kwisi pani-si ithirikuna ka-sa-do-peni na-kwa
‘In this place married people hang in their hammocks’

5: pani-si pamu ’a-ma ’a hanu-syawa-ka na-kuka
house-NPOSS middle-IN.MIDDLE big-CL:FIRE-SEQ 3pl-light
halia-bala-pidana de:pita-nuku
white-EVERYWHERE-REM.P.REP night+AFF-TOP.NON.A/S
äsyapi syawa ithirikuna na-h ’a-ni-kayama-ze
pepper+CL:HOLLOW fire near 3pl-eat-TOP.ADV:smoking.grid-POSS
‘They light a big fire in the middle of the house, to light everything at night, and (put) a pepperpot near fire (with) a smoking grid’.

6: amaku yapise na-ni-nipe na-yà syawa-pe-pidana
hammock under 3pl-do-NOM 3pl-stay fire-PL-REM.P.REP
‘Under a hammock there used to be fires’

7: nawiki-yawa
people-CL:HOLE
‘grave(s)’

8, 9: yakolekama ‘door’
hi-naka phe-zi pa-mha
DEM:AN-PRES.VIS IMP+enter-REL IMP+go-PRES.NON.VIS
‘This is where one enters’
The following ten subgroups of Tariana are arranged in the order of seniority. Some are named after a mythological being they descend from, and some after a totemic animal; the etymology of some names is unknown. Names ending in -ne are plural (-ne is the Tariana plural animate marker: for instance, the Britos are called Brito-ne; this marker is also used in the name $iri-ne$ — see p. 10). 33

1. Kwenaka (descendants of the first son; meaning unknown);
2. $iri-imhene$ (descendants of the second son; meaning unknown);
3. Kali-ne (possibly, descendants of Kali, the mythological hero-creator: Kali-PL);
4. Paipene (meaning unknown);
5. Kumadene (Ducks; people of the Duck);
6. Mali-ne (Guans);
7. Kunuli-whi (feather of Kúnuli bird);
8. Phi $i$-kawa, Phi $i$-kawa-pu (group of agoutis); or Phi $i$-ne ‘Agoutis’; or Phi $i$-kawa-pu-pe ‘big feet of agouti’.
10. Wa-mia-riku-ne (1pl-only-LOCN:AFF-PL) ‘we, the only/last ones’.

5.2.2 Relations with neighbours. The patterns of swidden agriculture require access to extensive territory, and the fight for resources may indeed explain the raiding and feuding, memories of which live on (e.g., the wars between Tucano peoples and the Tariana). It appears from myths told by the Wamia$ri$kune that their relationship with other Tariana subtribes had always been rather hostile — cf. Story 1 below.

The Tariana’s relations with the Makú is a mixture of contempt and fear: since the Makú know the secret of the arrow-poison, curare, and are jungle dwellers, they are believed to possess the secrets of the magic ‘evil breath’. The Desano are also feared and, at the same time, despised: they are widely known to be sorcerers and are believed to be capable of causing all sorts of evil. At the same time, they are considered ‘younger brothers’ of the Tariana and are assigned a lower status; the Tariana cannot marry them.

The Tariana do not seem to have particularly friendly feelings towards the Baniwa of Içana (referred to as $Uhu\$-nawiki ‘Hohôdene’, or Maya-naku-ne (?middle-on-PL ‘people of the middle’?)), said to have always been cannibals who used to live ‘in caves’. The Tariana had some contact with the Warekena (the group now known as Guarequena in Venezuela, or as Warena/Old Warekena on the Xié river in Brazil — see §2) while the Warekena lived in the Vaupés basin; due to a ‘conflict’, the Tariana drove the Warekena away from the Vaupés, from where they were forced to move to the Xié river.34 A group the Tariana seem to be particularly afraid of are the Makiritare said to live upstream towards the Orinoco river basin; they are supposed to be very unfriendly, to possess very strong poisons and magic powers and to consume the dead bodies of their friends and enemies.35

---

33 A similar hierarchy of subtribes was given by Brüzzi (1977: 101-103). However, the hierarchical relations between the subtribes may have been different in the past. According to Story 1 in this collection — one of the origin stories told by Cândido Brito — once upon a time the Wamia$ri$kune possessed the Yurupary flute ($p\{ i$) (§5.3.3) which elder brothers did not have, and which gave them the right to a higher status. The names of subtribes Ka $i$, Kwenaka, Pi$ia$ (cf. Phi$i$-ne) are also quoted by Biocca (1965: 255) — who does not put them in any hierarchical order.

34 This information comes from Tariana traditional stories, and has been confirmed by Padre Casimiro Bek$\$ta.

35 The name Makiritare is the autodenomination of Dekwana, a Carib group (see Derbyshire forthcoming); however, this description is reminiscent of some rituals of the Yanomami.
Every Tucano group used to have a group of Makú ‘associated’ with them (cf. Martins and Martins forthcoming, Silverwood-Cope 1990) — for instance, the Hupda are known as Makú of Tucano, and the Kakua (or Bará) are also known as Makú of Cubeo, or Makú of Guanano. The Tariana do not have ‘Makú’ of their own; however, I was told that back in the olden days they used to have ‘underlings’ (na-kholena ‘their servants’, or surara-ne ‘soldiers’) of their own who would ‘light cigars’ for them in the cigar-smoking ritual (see §5.3.3) — a group of very small people called mayhene (lit. ‘small beetles’). In the account provided by Cândido Brito, the Mayhene got ‘fed up’ and moved upstream the Rio Negro, and probably still live somewhere around Manaus.

5.2.3 Kinship system and marriage. The Tariana and Tucano classificatory kinship systems are a variation of a basic Dravidian type (Sorensen 1967(1972):85; Goehner, West and Merrifield 1985: 59). The basic distinction is between cross and parallel cousins; members of ego’s generation are either parallel cousins considered classificatory siblings, or cross-cousins; only cross-cousins are regarded as marriageable. (This distinction is often described as ‘agnatic’, or ‘one’s own group’, contrasting with affine, or ‘other’s group’: Jackson 1983: 106-112). The kinship terminology distinguishes five generations, with the sex of relatives being marked for each generation (cf. Jackson 1983: 106). A member of an exogamous patrilineal phratry is eligible to marry a person from another exogamous phratry which is identified as speaking a different language.

Similar to Tucano peoples, the Tariana practice bilateral cross-cousin marriage. Thus, one’s mother is often from the same language group as one’s wife (see Sorensen 1967(1972)). This principle is explained by Jackson (1976:76) as ‘marriage alliance’, i.e. a tendency to fortify already existing links between the two affinally related kins.36

Since marriage implies the loss of a female ‘producer’, this loss has to be replaced; and according to Goldman (1979:136ff), this accounts for the principle of ‘sister exchange’ — when a man typically obtains a wife by exchanging his sister (or a female relative of the same generation) for another man’s real sister. Traditionally, marriages used to be arranged by parents (see Brúzzi 1977, and Goldman 1979). The party which accompanied the future bridegroom used to come to the settlement of the future bride, and the courtship began — ending with a traditional ‘capture’ of a wife, after which the bridegroom had to pay in exchange for the bride. Apparently, this custom is no longer followed.

Older brothers are supposed to get married before younger ones (the same applies to elder sisters). There are often not enough women for every man — the theme of an unmarried young man ‘not loved by women’ is pervasive in Tariana narratives (cf. Story 8 below). A widower had a preferential right to get married before his elder son; and he can give his

36 This is indeed the case with some members of the Brito family (see Table 11), but not with other members: Cândido’s wife Maria is Piratapuya, and so is Juvino’s wife Glória (she, however, does not speak Piratapuya). The wives of Graciliano, Ismael and the late Francisco are Tucano. Cândido’s mother, Maria Álvare, was Guanano, and so is the wife of his elder brother Roberto. The wife of his younger brother (mother of Rafael, one of my earlier consultants), Leonardo, is Cubeo, while Rafael has just married a Tucano woman. Manoel, the elder brother of Cândido’s father Paulino, was married to a Piratapuya, and so were two of his three sons; the third son was married to a Tucano woman. In principle, all the combinations of marriageable tribe and languages should be possible. However, in practice this is not so. Some tribes are considered ‘brothers’, or ‘younger brothers’; then the marriage between their representatives is prohibited: for instance, the Tariana cannot marry the Desano. Other restrictions, among the Tucano peoples, include the absence of marriages between the Tucano and the Barasano, or the Guanano and the Piratapuya (C. Hugh-Jones 1979, S. Hugh-Jones 1979; Jackson 1983: 106ff).
daughter away in a process similar to ‘sister exchange’. A widow (uphedo, from upe-hado (past-parent-feminine)) should marry a younger brother of her late husband, thus perpetuating the family. (Tariana has a special term referring to a widow(er) getting remarried, -henita; traditionally, if a woman did not like her husband or his family, she could simply run away — see C. Hugh-Jones 1979, Jackson 1983, Goldman 1979; if her husband failed to get her back and she married someone else, the term -henita would not be applicable.) There is no term for step-parents; the term for a step-child is nu-tawhe nuři (or nu-itu) (1sg-bring.up 1sg+son (or 1sg-daughter), lit. son/daughter I bring up). First-born children are the most important — husband and wife used to address each other using the sacred names of their first-born children (the Tariana term for a first-born child is phe rũ-si).

An elder brother or an elder sister is entitled to respect if they behave properly (also see Jackson 1983: 112-116). In numerous Tariana stories the elder sister is the one who misbehaves, provoking chaos and disaster. ‘Wrong’ marriages may also lead to a disaster — this is reflected in Story 6 below (known in Tucano as Namakuru: Jackson 1983: 114), in which a widowed mother got remarried, taking an evil spirit ‘aki (see Table 10) as a husband.

The kinship terms are given in Table 8. They have irregular plural forms and vocative forms (analysed in detail in Aikhenvald in prep.).

5.3 Ceremonies and beliefs.

5.3.1 General remarks: the Tariana pantheon. The Tariana share numerous beliefs, ceremonies and superstitions with other peoples of the Vaupés region, and also with the Baniwa of Içana. Here I will not attempt an exhaustive description of Tariana and Tucano ritual life; my intention is to highlight the most striking features necessary for understanding the Tariana stories.

Tariana religion is animistic; due to the efforts of the Catholic church traditional religious concepts are now intertwined with Christianity. The creator of the Tariana and of the whole world is believed to be Yapi-rikurĩ (‘apirikuri) (lit. bone-LOC-REL) (cf. Baniwa Yapi-Jiku-Ji ‘the one who is on the bone’, Tucano O’ã-kĩ (bone-son) ‘son of the bone’). He is also known as Wanari Yapirikuri: wanari means ‘the American snake bird (Anhinga anhinga, Portuguese carará), and Yapirikuri is believed to appear disguised as this bird. He is sometimes identified with the Christian God, e.g. Yapi-rikurĩ di-‘amikada (3sgn-die-CL:DAY) ‘Good Friday; lit. the day when Yapirikuri died’. Story 2 below tells about the flood and the fire which Yapirikuri decided to inflict upon the world, because people were ‘bad and cannibals’ — it is reminiscent of the Biblical flood (however, the Tariana are conscious of this similarity and try and keep the stories apart).

Kali is the creator and the master of manioc, while Kui (possibly related to Baniwa Kuwai: Brüzzi 1994) is the master of various types of snuff and the protector of shamans. He is also the owner of the Yurupary flute (piiri-minari ‘flute INDF-master-MASC). The reason why it is prohibited for women to see the Yurupary flute is that both Yapirikuri and Kui dislike women (ka-duiha ka-na ‘REL-dislike REL-want) — who had ‘sinned’ by having allowed the Moon (Ke:ri) to copulate with them. Ancient people of the ‘olden days’ are called Hipada nawiki (‘stone people’) since the traces of their adventures are still there, in the form of stones on the rapids around the Vaupés.

37 Traditional marriage customs are now falling into disuse. Twenty-year olds and teenagers prefer to marry white people, or ‘caboclos’ (part-whites/part-Indians) from the regional centers, of a higher social status than themselves. Marriages are often arranged by young people themselves (though the rules of exogamy are, roughly, observed, if the marriage is between two indigenous people). The marriage principles outlined above do not apply for Makú groups, who do not constitute part of the cultural area; they are considered inferior in every way, and ridiculed, partly, for ‘marrying their own siblings’.
Table 8. Tariana kinship system
Numbers in brackets refer to comments to Table 8 given below.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Agnates</th>
<th>Affines (11)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>+2 FF/MF nu-hwe-ɾi (1sg-grandparent-MASC) (1)</td>
<td>WF, HF nu-hʰawe-ɾi (14)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FM/MM hido</td>
<td>WM, HM nu-hʰawe-ru (14)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>+1 FOB, F ha-niɾi (2)</td>
<td>MB nu-khi-ɾi (5)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FYB nu-nami</td>
<td>WF, HF nu-hʰawe-ɾi (14)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M ha-do(a) (3)</td>
<td>WM, HM nu-hʰawe-ɾu (14)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FZ nu-kwi-ɾu (4)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O OB nu-phe-ɾi (6)</td>
<td>MBS/FZS nu-te du-ɾi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>YB nu-we-ɾi (6)</td>
<td>H nu-sa-nizi.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OZ nu-phe-ɾu (6)</td>
<td>HB nu-si-ɾi (12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>YZ nu-we-do (6)</td>
<td>HZ, BWZ nu-sa-ɾu (12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-1 S nu-ɾi (7); ByS nu-idoa-ɾi (7)</td>
<td>ZS, ZD nu-wasado (9)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(masc.ego)</td>
<td>DH nu-sima-ɾi (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BS paidoa-ɾi (fem.ego)</td>
<td>DW nu rinu &lt; nu-ɾi-ɾinu (1sg-son-wife)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D nu-ɾi (8)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BD nu-idua-ɾu (fem.ego) (8)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-2 SS, DS/ZSS nu-daki-ɾi (10)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SD, DD/ZSD nu-daki-ɾu (10)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

B - brother; D - daughter; F - father; H - husband; M - mother; O - older; S - son; W - wife; Y - younger; Z - sister.
Comments to Table 8.

General: Most kinship nouns are inalienably possessed; they must take a possessive prefix. In Table 8 they are given with 1sg prefix nu-’my’. Some terms, such as hadoa ‘mother’, can also be treated as alienably possessed and then are used without a prefix.

1. These terms are used to refer to grandparents, great-grandparents etc.; the suffix -peri (OLD:MASC), -peru (OLD:FEM) is used for ancestors who are ‘long gone’, i.e. either have been dead for a long time, or are ‘distant’ in generation.

2. The term ha-niri (parent-MASC) is used to refer to one’s father, father’s elder brother, as well as grandfather’s elder brother’s sons. However, one’s own father is distinguished from the rest in the vocative form: vocative form for one’s father is pai — which does not appear to be a loan — and for the rest paiphé (see §4.3, p.20, on how the term ha-niri underwent restructuring under Tucano influence). The plural, ha-niri-nipe, refers to the generation of one’s classificatory fathers.

3. The term ha-do(a) (parent-FEM) is also used to refer to father’s brother’s wives, as the female counterpart of ha-niri.

4. The term for a father’s sister, nu-kwi-ru, has the same vocative form as ‘wife’s mother’ (nukui).

5. The term for mother’s brother is also used to refer to the husband of masculine ego’s father’s sister.

6. Terms for elder brother and elder sister are also used to refer to one’s father’s elder brother’s children, and also to one’s mother’s elder sister’s and mother’s younger sister’s children; terms for younger brother and younger sister are used to refer to one’s father younger brother’s children; plural forms nu-phe-ri-nipe, nu-wene-ne are used to refer to all parallel cousins and siblings (elder and younger, respectively).

7. The term nurí is also used to refer to the son of the husband’s brother. The term nu-idoa-ri is used to refer to masculine ego’s brother’s son. The term paidoa-ri is used to refer to the son of feminine ego’s brother.

8. The term nuitu is also used to refer to one’s brother’s daughter and husband’s brother’s daughter. The term nu-idua-ru is used to refer to feminine ego’s brother’s daughter.

9. There is no gender distinction in the reference term for ZD/ZS; the gender distinction is made in vocative forms: ZS is tethu, while ZS is tesí.

10. The gender distinction is neutralised in the vocative form daké.

11. The generic term nu-dalıpa-ki-pe is used to refer to wife’s or husband’s relatives of the same generation as ego. There is also a generic term for agnatic relative, masc. nu-kesi-ni, fem. nu-kesi-dua.

12. Unlike the Bará (Jackson 1983: 112), the Tariana do not distinguish FZS/FZD and MZS/MZD. The term nu-sa-ru is used for husband’s sister and sister of brother’s wife. The term nu-si-ri is used for husband’s brother and husband of brother’s wife.

13. The term for wife’s brother, nu-darina, is also sometimes used as a generic term for wife’s relatives. One’s brother’s wife can be referred to descriptively as nu-phe-ri-sa-do (1sg-younger.sibling-MASC+INDF-spouse-FEM) ‘elder brother’s spouse’ (or nu-we-ri-sa-do 1sg-younger.sibling-MASC+INDF-spouse-FEM ‘younger brother’s wife’).

14. The vocative forms for wife’s or husband’s father are the same as for mother’s brother and father’s sister respectively (see 4 above; Baniwa has the same term for ‘father’s sister’ and ‘mother-in-law’: nu-kwi-ru (Oliveira 1985) (note that the term nu-kwiru in Tariana means ‘father’s sister’). The plural nu-h`awe-ri-nipe is used to refer to all the wife’s or husband’s older generation relatives.

15. The term ‘daughter’s husband’ nu-sima-ri has the same vocative form as sister’s son (tesí), and ‘son’s wife’ nuziru has the same vocative form as sister’s daughter (tethú).
The White People (vazana) appear in the origin myth as one of the Tariana subgroups; it says that, due to their ‘knowledge’, they managed to get hold of the gun and clothing while other groups (e.g. Tariana, Cubeo, Desano, Piratapuya) were helpless, ‘like children’ (see Hugh-Jones 1988, on how white people were incorporated into the mythological cycle of the East Tucano group Barasano). The mythical ‘snake people’, or ‘fish-people’ (kuphe-ne), are also conceived of as ‘white’ (cf. similar observations in Hugh-Jones 1988, for Barasano, and in Harner 1984: 154-5, for Jivaro). They are ‘in charge’ of fishing and, sometimes, hunting. They belong to the other world (pa-ehkwapi ‘one/other38, CL:WORLD) and typically appear disguised as big handsome white women or men. They lure unsuccessful hunters (husaite, Portuguese panema), or ‘men not loved by women’ (ina meninite) to ‘live’ with them in their huge beautiful underwater houses; when they come back to the earth they bring nothing but misfortune to their relatives (cf. Story 8 below). The ‘snake people’ are also the ones who take away girls who menstruate for the first time and dare to run away from their seclusion in order to have a wash — see Story 5 below. The ‘snake people’ can be helpful to a human being; Story 9 shows how a ‘snake man’ allowed a destitute widow to get fish from a secret stream, on condition that she should not take too many; but once the allowed quantity was exceeded, the whole village was destroyed.

5.3.2 Shamans. Shamans — see Table 9 — are divided into six groups, according to their strength and ability to inflict illnesses (kaiperi di-a ‘illness he-gives’) and to cure them (kaiperi di-susu ‘illness he-sucks’); note that the first is the highest type and the sixth is the lowest. They sniff different kinds of snuff (generic wheru, hipatu ‘snuff’). Shamans of a ‘higher’ category can do anything the lower category can do; however, each has their specialisation — for instance, the ‘beginner’, sakaka (number 6 in Table 9) specialises in ‘attracting women’. Shamans of types 1 and 2 are sometimes also called yawi ‘jaguar’ because of their ability of ‘turning into jaguars and eating people’ (see §4.1, on Yawi as one of erroneous names for the Tariana). These shamans also have the power of opening ‘the pot of fever’ (mentioned in §5.1, p. 21) so as to make their enemies fall ill and die.

Other people with some magic powers (outside the hierarchy of shamans) are ka-~apa (REL-bless) ‘blessor’ (i.e. a person with the power to bless the tar of certain trees, and to bless people so that some illnesses go away), yaku-si mina-zi (INDF-talk-NPOSS master-MASC) ‘master of speech; a magician who does not sniff snuff but can foresee the future’, di-tape-kani (3sgnf-cure-AGENTIVE.NOM) ‘curer; someone who can cure diseases’, and ma:zu ‘the master of ritual dances’.  

5.3.3 Initiation. Feasts and rituals. When a girl menstruates for the first time (hi$tuka) she is put for three days into an enclosure, where she has to eat certain types of fruit but not fish, game or pepper, and is forbidden to bathe. After three days she is let out, beaten, bathed and painted by an old woman, and an offering feast (see below) is organised. A boy, once he reaches puberty, is supposed to spend some time in the jungle proving he can hunt and fast; after that he returns to the village, gets beaten, bathed and painted by an old man, and participates in an offering feast. Female initiation is still practiced, while male initiation was abandoned several decades back. These initiation rites are similar across the Upper Rio

---

38 Tariana uses the same item in the meaning of ‘one’ and ‘other, another’.
Negro; cf. the description of the male initiation of Candelário da Silva, the last speaker of Bare, in Aikhenvald (1995a: 52-54).\textsuperscript{39}

\textsuperscript{39} For the description of female and male initiation in Tucano cultures, see Jackson (1983) and S. Hugh-Jones (1979).
Table 9. Classification of shamans and their powers

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>type</th>
<th>type of snuff sniffed</th>
<th>powers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. <em>Wahiwa marieri</em></td>
<td>keri hi-ni-na (moon INDF+copulate-TOP.ADV-CL:VERT) lit. ‘moon’s penis’</td>
<td>can cure and inflict illnesses and undo the effect of any ‘evil breath’; can transform into a jaguar (<em>yawi-maka-pe nhe</em> (jaguar-CL:CLOTH-PL 3pl+enter))</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. <em>Adaki yawikiri</em> (lit. fever <em>Yawikiri</em>)</td>
<td>kerawiki</td>
<td>‘enter jaguar skins’ and ‘eat’ people (*yawi ka-h ʔa: be.jaguar REL-eat’); have the power to ‘open the pot of fever’ (<em>adakiaphi</em>).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. <em>Yawikiri</em> (or kerawi <em>yawikiri</em>)</td>
<td>kerawiki</td>
<td>can cure and inflict illnesses, do the ‘blessing’; undo the effect of the ‘evil breath’ inflicted by shamans of lower or equivalent status.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. <em>Marawa yawikiri</em></td>
<td>marawatI</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. <em>Yatu mina-ri</em> (snuff master-MASC) or <em>yatu yawikiri</em></td>
<td>yatu</td>
<td>can bless ‘tar’, cure and inflict some illnesses.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. <em>Sakaka</em></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>knows the language of ‘snake people’, can cure some illnesses; knows the secret of <em>wiri</em> ‘aphrodisiae’.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The Tariana term for an old man or woman who is performing the initiation ritual is di-tudeta-kasi (this term is often translated as ‘godmother’, or ‘godfather’); the child to whom the ritual is done is called nuri-da (1sg+son-CL:ROUND) (translated as ‘godchild’).

The Offering ritual (known in Portuguese as Dabucuri festival, Tariana na-walita-nipe (3pl-offer-NOM)) is usually organised by one village or longhouse if they have surplus of produce, or as a part of the rite of initiation. The village or longhouse where the feast is going to take place is responsible for making manioc beer (Portuguese caxiri), while the others provide the food (see Reichel-Dolmatoff 1971, and especially the description in Brüzzi 1977: 303-304). After ritual dances organised by ma:zu ‘the master of ceremony’, kahpi (a strongish variety of manioc beer) is distributed, and drinking carries on until the next day — this is why another term for the offering festival is pa-i-zada (IMP-drink-TOP.ADV-CL:DAY) ‘day of drinking’. Drinking involves vomiting (inducing oneself to vomit), to be able to fully enjoy the feast. In the morning of the third day the cigar-smoking ritual takes place, to mark the end of the feast. Male members of a low-ranking sib light two big cigars (yema) each of which is held in a forked cigar-holder (yemapu). The most important males (usually, the most powerful shamans) of the two participating groups (the ‘host’ group and the ‘guest’ group) offer the cigars to each other to smoke (na-siteta-kaka, 3pl-smoke+CAUS-REC, ‘make each other smoke’); after that the cigars are passed from more important to less important men. The shamans and the important men alternate in reciting episodes from origin stories (further details are in Brüzzi 1977: 312). Cigar-smoking is accompanied by putting snuff on one another’s tongue and licking it from there (na-pe-rita-kaka (3pl-lick+CAUS-REC) ‘make each other lick’).

A subtype of ‘offering’ feast (offering of fruit, but not of meat or fish) involves the sacred flutes (pi:ri) known as Yurupary flutes (Tucano mî$sri, Baniwa Kuwai; see S. Hugh-Jones 1979; Jackson 1983: 188-191; Brüzzi 1977: 313-315, on the geographical spread of the Yurupary cult and its characterisation of the Içana-Vaupés region). Women are not allowed to see the flutes (and have to run away inside the longhouse as soon as they hear the sound of them); a woman who has seen a Yurupary flute must die (cf. Story 4 below).

5.3.4 Taboos and fears. There are numerous taboos concerning a man’s behaviour in the jungle. A hunter, if he wants to be successful, cannot have sex, or even think about women, before he goes on a hunting trip. Otherwise he may fall victim to the evil spirit ˆamu who might appear to him in the image of a ‘white woman’ (i.e. snake-woman, or ‘fish-woman’: kuphe i-sa-do (fish INDF-spouse-FEM: see §5.3.1) and devour him, or ‘take his heart away’.

Similar sets of taboos apply to women who know the secret of making pots. For three days before they go to a far away place (usually a clearing in the jungle), they are not supposed to have sex, eat, drink, defecate, or urinate: otherwise the pots will break (Olivia Brito and Maria Brito, p.c.). Nowadays, very few women know these secrets, so female taboos are falling into disuse.

The taboos concerning women’s behaviour are linked to the traditional fear of women’s menstrual blood (widespread in numerous other cultures across the world). Menstrual blood is believed to be the result of women’s ‘misbehaviour’ with the Moon (ke:zi ka-sa-do (moon REL-spouse-FEM) ‘moon marries [them]’). Similar to other Tucano origin myths, the Tariana origin myths mention an ‘ancestor’ woman believed to be the first to use the Yurupary flute, which she subsequently lost; however, this story is not well remembered. Since women continually ‘misbehave’ and cannot even see the Yurupary flute, they are often

\[40\] This is not mentioned by Brüzzi.
referred to as ma-nihta-kadite (NEG-think/reason-NEG+CL:AN) ‘the ones who do not think’.41

Various other taboos are linked to the ‘likes’ and ‘dislikes’ of evil spirits listed in Table 10. The most important of the evil spirits, ˆamu, is known to have a liking for the blood of the first menstruation; this is the reason why girls who menstruate for the first time (hištu-kite ‘menstruate for the first time’-THEMATIC+CL:AN’) have to be kept in seclusion and maintain dietary restrictions — lest ˆamu comes and devours them. The evil spirits are especially dangerous at nighttime — for instance, one is not supposed to make any appointments with another person after dark lest the evil spirit learns about it and comes and eats a person up, disguised as the other person. The fear of getting close to ‘beings who are not “like us”’ is reflected in numerous stories about people living together with evil spirits, or snake-people, and striking deals with spirits of the jungle; all this involves moving into ‘the other world’ (pa-ehkwapi) which is always ominous and not recommendable.42 (Also see Aikhenvald and Dixon 1998, for some putative correlations between the various taboos and restrictions, and linguistic phenomena, in Tariana).

Table 10. Hierarchy of evil spirits of the jungle

Evil spirits of the jungle are called awakada-peni (jungle-PL:AN) ‘the jungle ones’. The first two in the hierarchy below, ˆamu and waliru, are considered awakadapeni yekana ‘chiefs of the jungle ones’. The third term, ˆaki, is often used as a cover term for all the evil spirits of the jungle (possibly, to avoid the mention of ˆamu and waliru, lest they come).

1. ˆamu is a dangerous spirit who can take the shape of a white woman (snake-woman), or a jaguar and rob the ‘heart’ (kare) of a person; hates small children crying, pregnant or menstruating women, and reacts adversely to the smell of burnt food in the forest — when people smoke fish or game — as well as to any people who eat cold food at night; can provoke wind and thunder. The only way of getting away from him is with the help of tar blessed by a shaman ka-ˆapa (see §5.3.2).
2. waliru is also a dangerous spirit, usually stronger than a man; can appear in the shape of a person or an animal; but a man can override him by saying an obscenity.
3. ˆaki is a minor spirit who can take the shape of a person (for instance, if someone breaks the taboo and marks the exact time at night, it is quite possible that his doppleganger, a ˆaki in human disguise, will come in his stead and devour others by sucking the brain out of their head); a man is often stronger than a ˆaki. It often appears as a peculiar animal, e.g. a white deer. A variety of ˆaki is kapiiiri wäpi (lit. body of an arrow bone?), a very tall and thin being.
4. ka-wana ka-h ˆa (lit. REL-call REL-eat) is a type of evil spirit who is usually harmless but scares women and children with his horrifying cry.
5. salu ‘large armadillo’, Portuguese tamandua bandeira, is a minor spirit in the disguise of an animal; regarded as a ‘servant’ of ˆamu and waliru.
6. hurinari ‘wild cat’, Portuguese jaguatirica, is a minor spirit in the disguise of an animal; regarded as a ‘servant’ of ˆamu and waliru and is ‘weaker’ than salu.

41 Tariana has several verbs for thinking: -(a)nihta ‘think, reason’, -awada ‘think of, remember’ and -himeta ‘think, feel, have presentiments’.
42 The traditional practice of infanticide of twins is probably linked to these fears: Stephen Hugh-Jones (p.c.) suggested that since animals, not humans, have several children simultaneously, human twins must be killed (or left to die) as someone from ‘the other world’.
5.3.5 **Naming and names.** All the Tariana have a Portuguese given name and a Portuguese family name; the given name is used to refer to the people when they are absent; kinship terms are used for address. Similarly to other peoples of the Vaupés region, the Tariana have a closed set of traditional personal sacred names called ‘names of blessing’ (Tariana pa-\`apa-nipe i-pitana (IMP-bless-NOM INDF-name) ‘blessing name’, Tucano baxeke wame ‘spirit name’). ‘Names of blessing’ are given to children (not to babies); they used to be employed in ‘spells’ and ‘blessings’, especially when children were sick. Personal names are a separate subclass of nouns (they have vocative forms, and no plurals).

The list of names of the Brito family (as far back as my consultants could remember) is given in Table 11 below (the names of my consultants are in bold). Women’s children are not ‘named’, because they belong to a different language group and do not count as Tariana.43

Only some of the sacred names have a translation: **Kumatharo** means ‘female duck’; **Tui\’i** means ‘japú bird’, **Se\’rewhari** means ‘ lilac-tailed parrotlet’, and **Kumada** means ‘male duck’. It is unclear on what principle people are given names.44

**Table 11. Names of the Brito family (Wamia\’zikune subtribe)**
(Christian names of my consultants are in bold).

Antônio (masc.) (Tudawhi\’i) had two children: Manoel (masc.) (Papheka) and Paulino (masc.) (Kumada).

Manoel (Papheka) had four children:
Júlia (fem) (Kumatharo); Juse (masc.) (Menaka); Eduardo (masc.) (Tui\’i; died young); Ricardo (masc.) (Se\’rewhari)

**Júlia’s children:** do not count as Tariana (and receive no name)

**Juse’s children:** Joaninha (fem.) (Balida), Clementina (fem.) (Kumatharo), Luisa (fem.) (Kaisado), Madalena (fem.) (Balida), João (masc.) (Tui\’i), Sebastião (masc.) (Menaka), Crispiliano (masc.) (Papheka), Maria (fem.) (Kumatharo)

**Ricardo’s children:** Pedrina (fem.) (Balida), Raimundo (masc.) (Papheka), Emilio (masc.) (Kumada), Erminha (fem.) (Kumatharo), Manoel (masc.) (Menaka), Tiago (masc.) (Kuda)

Paulino (Kumada) had four children:
Roberto (masc.) (Papheka); **Cândido** (masc.) (Menaka); Ermina (fem) (?, died young); Leonardo (masc.) (Kumada)

43 Currently, these names are rarely used and my consultants remembered them with difficulty. The following names are mentioned by Moreira and Moreira (1994: 61-62) as ‘sacred names’ of the Kaline subgroup (see §5.2.1); similar names also used by the Wamia\’zikune are given in brackets: female: Bari (cf. Wamia\’zikune Ba\’ida), Nana, Anas\’aro (cf. Wamia\’zikune Anaisado), Siesaro: male: Kedari, Kuenakin, Yawi, Kari, Baya, Bayakan\’i, Ku\’ta (cf. Wamia\’zikune Kuda), Sâmi, Sâmida, Tariakanô, Kui, Paramahanô, U\’hui. At least some of these names sound Tucano (e.g. Bayakan\’i, U\’hui) (cf. Brüzzi 1977), which is understandable in view of the fact that the Moreiras and their subtribe have completely lost the language.

44 I was given a name, **Kumatharo\’o,** ‘female duck’, only during the fourth field trip, and my son Michael was named **Tui\’i** ‘pied crested oropendola’, ‘to keep us safe during our trips because we fly a lot’.
Robertó’s children: Celestina (fem.) (Balida), Jorge (masc.) (Kumada), João (masc.) (Menaka)

Cândido’s children: Ismael (masc.) (Tuirí), Olivia (fem.) (Kumatharo), Graciliano (masc.) (Menaka), Francisco (masc.) (Kumada), Juvino (masc.) (Kuda), Lurdes (fem.) (Balida), Luis (masc.) (Serewhari, died young), Jusé (masc.) (Kumada)

Leonardo’s children: Rafael (masc.) (Serewhali), Clarisse (fem.) (?), Gabriel (masc.) (Tuirí), Maria-Ester (fem.) (Balida), Fatima (fem.) (?), Vanilde (fem.) (Kumatharo)

Ismael’s children: Jaquelene (fem.) (Balida), Jacimara (fem.) (Kumatharo), Osmar (masc.) (Menaka);

Olivia’s children: Laura (fem.) (Kumatharo);

Graciliano’s children: Caro (fem.) (?), Rosinete (fem.) (Balida), Rosimar (masc.) (Tuirí), Nazare (fem.) (Kumatharo), Kelli (fem.) (Anasado);

Francisco’s children: Francileni (fem.) (Balida), Francismar (fem.) (Tuirí); Gracileni (fem.) (Kumatharo)

Juvino’s children: Elio (masc.) (Kumada), Jocimar (masc.) (Papheka), Jocivaldo (masc.) (Menaka), Jocifran (masc.) (Kuda), Janaine (fem.) (Kumatharo)

6. The present collection. The stories in this collection were selected from a corpus of over hundred and thirty Tariana stories — told by various members of the Brito family during the period of 1991 - 1997. I have tried to provide a sample of different genres of stories told by each member of the Brito family, and to include stories which are culturally significant.

Story 1, ‘The Tariana’, told by Cândido Brito, describes the early migrations of the ancestors of the Tariana, as well as the relationships of the Wamiařikune subtribe with other, senior, Tariana subtribes.

Story 2, ‘The Deeds of the Creator’, also told by Cândido Brito, tells about the creation of the world, the flood, and the origin of manioc. Story 3 is a traditional narrative about the origin of tobacco, snuff and fire, also told by Cândido Brito. Story 4, ‘The Secret Flute’, also told by Cândido Brito, shows what can happen if a woman chances to catch a glimpse of the magic Yurupary flute — which women are forbidden to see. Story 5, ‘A Menstruating Girl’, told by Juvino Brito, relates the fate of a girl who had her first menstruation and failed to observe the taboos.

Story 6, ‘How Children Turned into Guans’, told by Olivia Brito, is a widespread story in the region: it is about a widow who married a devil (thus violating marriage rules) and had a child by him, and was consequently abandoned by her children who had killed the devil and his child and then turned into guan-birds and flew away, abandoning her. Similar stories are told by the Tucano (known as Namakuru: Jackson 1983: 114) and by the Baniwa — my corpus of the Hohôdene dialect of Baniwa contains a similar story told by the late Marcília Rodrigues.

Story 7, ‘Evil Spirits’, told by Graciliano Brito, illustrates a popular belief about how one should not make any appointments at any particular hour after dark lest a ‘aki (see Table 10) comes in human guise and devours one of the people involved.
Story 8, ‘A Man and a Snake’, told by Juvino Brito, is a representative of a series of stories about young men disliked by women — and desperate to get married — who end up under the spell of ‘white’ snake women, bringing disaster to their family. Story 9, ‘A Widow’, told by Jusé Brito, is about how human beings can benefit from contacts with snake people; however, if the orders given by snake people are violated, a disaster is bound to happen.

Story 10, ‘The Tariana Language’, told by Graciliano Brito, is a bitter account of how the Tariana lost their language due to the language policy of the Catholic church in the early twentieth century, and what this loss signifies to the Tariana people.

A final note about the organisation of the texts in this collection is in order. All the texts are supplied with an interlinear morpheme gloss, and then translated into English. Homophonous morphemes (e.g. -nha ‘pausal marker; interrogative present visual; imperative (containing doubt)’) are differentiated by their glosses. ‘+’ is used to indicate fused morphemes, e.g. dirêta ‘he ordered’ is glossed as 3sgnf+need+CAUS, its underlying form being di- (3sgnf) -iça (need) -ita (CAUS). Portmanteau morphemes are glossed with a ‘:’, for instance, -peni ‘plural animate’, or ha ‘demonstrative animate’. A ‘.’ is used in cases problematic from the point of view of morphemic analysis, e.g. thuya ‘all.NON.INVID’ (‘all non-individuated’), thuime ‘all.INDIV’ (‘all individuated’). As mentioned above (p. 18), Tariana has several kinds of causatives, among them two morphological causatives, marked with -i and with -ta (see Aikhenvald forthcoming-g). When these cooccur, they are treated as separate morphemes except for the cases where one cannot occur without the other, e.g. -ixêta (underlying form -ixa-ita ‘need-CAUS’), but not *ixê (underlying form ixa-i). Further details will appear in Aikhenvald (in prep.). All grammatical morphemes are glossed in small caps while lexical morphemes are glossed in lower case.
Story 1. The Tariana. Author: Cândido Brito

(1) ma: wa-sape wa-wa hi$-naku
let’s 1pl-speak 1pl-try this-TOP.NON.A/S

(2) pedalia-pe na-sape-tha-nhina hiku-naka
old-PL 3pl-speak-FR-REM.P.SEC.H this-PRES.VIS

‘Let’s try to speak (about this). This is what the old people told.’

(3) ai-nhina wali-kasu ka-nawika wa-sita
here-REM.P.SEC.H new-INT REL-be.people 1pl-finish

(4) wa-ya-hipe wa-de-nhina
1pl-POSS-LAND 1pl-have-REM.P.SEC.H

(5) di-a-nhina yapura wika kepitana-sina
3sgnf-go-REM.P.SEC.H Yapura top REL+name-REM.P.NON.VIS

‘In the beginning we lived here on our land. Its name was “on top of Yapura.”’

(6) nu-whe-ri-nipe ne-sina na-ya
1pl-grandparent-MASC-PL then- REM.P.NON.VIS 3pl-live

(7) na-ya thuya hi$ phenisi-ne
3pl-live all.NON.INDI DEM:AN first.born-AG

(8) maka-phari-pe na-ya-sina na-ya-sina
large-GROUP-PL 3pl-live-REM.P.NON.VIS 3pl-live-REM.P.NON.VIS

Our grandparents lived there, lived all the first-born (ones), large groups lived (there).’

(9) ne-nuku na-ya naha na-piryana alia-sina
then-TOP.NON.A/S 3pl-live they 3pl-Yurupary.flute:POSS EX-REM.P.NON.VIS

(10) naha na-piryana-ne-sina na-ya
they 3pl-Yurupary.flute:POSS-INS 3pl-live-REM.P.NON.VIS 3pl-live

‘They lived there, there were the Yurupary flutes, they lived with the Yurupary flute.’

(11) nu-hwe ri-nipe naha phenisi-misini kaya-sina

---

45 -naku is a variant of -nuku ‘topical non-subject’ attested in Cândido’s speech.

46 The tense-evidential marker used as ‘unmarked’ in most narratives is the remote past tense inferred, -pidana; other evidentials are also used if the way the information was obtained is important for the speaker.

47 The noun pi \ i ‘Yurupary flute’ is one of the few archaic nouns in Tariana which take a possessive suffix when possessed (cf. -\e in Pawhya-\e-pani, p. 14).

48 The -ne case has instrumental and comitative meaning (see Aikhenvald 1994b).

49 Note that realisations wh and hw, hm and mh, hn and nh, hk and kh, hp and ph are, in most cases, free variants; see Aikhenvald (in prep.).
My grandparents, they also were like first born, they had (the Yurupary flute), so the first born ones saw (it).

They hated (us), though we are the firstborn ones, they have our instrument, they said.

These younger brothers have too much, they are like the first borns, they said.

They are of the same tribe.

So they hated us, they muttered thus.

In this and many other cases the third person pronoun is used as a specificity marker.

Long vowels are often replaced with short vowels, hence variants na: and na (3pl+go, say; underlying form na-a), or ku:phe and kuphe ‘fish’. In one case e alternates with a in an unstressed syllable: -pidana ‘remote past inferred’ is often realised as -pidena.
'In the beginning it was this way, I am saying, the Iirimhene subtribe (of Tariana) called us ‘elder brother’, while we called them younger brother.'

‘My children are calling them again ‘younger brother!’, they say ‘elder brother!’

‘Now their children say ‘grandchild!’’

‘This is how is was, the old ones did, they quarreled because of the Yurupary flute.’

‘They quarrelled, there were two equals’ (equal ‘chiefs’).

‘His name was Tudawhiri, he was our grandfather.’
he Kwenaka-REM.P.NON.VIS REL+name he first.born

‘The name of the first born was Kwenaka.’

(35) di:-ne-pidana na na-nalita-kaka
3sgnf-INS-REM.P.REP 3pl+go 3pl-quarrel-REC

(36) hi$k kwaka piri i-pumina
DEM:AN what Yurupary.flute INDF-after

‘They quarreled with him because of the Yurupary flute.’

(37) na-nalita-kaka payaru na-ira-pidana
3pl-quarrel-REC caxiri 3pl-drink-REM.P.REP

(38) na:-siwa ma:si53-peri na-sape-pidana
3pl-be together bad-COLL 3pl-speak-REM.P.REP

(39) thawasi na-sape-pidana
discussion 3pl-speak-REM.P.REP

‘They quarreled, they drank caxiri (manioc beer), they said bad things to each other.’

(40) haw ma:si-peri pi-sape-ka pi-ni-thama phia
yes bad-COLL 2sg-speak-SEQ 2sg-do-+-FR+PRES.NON.VIS54 you

(41) di-a-pidana wa-whe-ri-ne
3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 1pl-grandparent-MASC-AG

‘Yes, you are saying bad things in vain, said our grandfather”

(42) waha pathida-peni-naka kasina-nuku
we equal-PL:AN-PRES.VIS now+ADV-TOP.NON.A/S

(43) waha diha-nuku wa-nalita wa-wa
we this-TOP.NON.A/S 1pl-quarrel 1pl-try

(44) di-a-pidana di-nalita-hna
3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-quarrel-PAUS

‘We are now equal, we shall try to quarrel about this one (the flute), he said and quarreled.’

(45) di-nalita kiaku di-nalita te pediwa-pidana
3sgnf-quarrel strong 3sgnf-quarrel until be.annoyed-REM.P.REP

‘He quarreled, he quarreled strongly until he became annoyed.’

53 s alternates with è and with ì before front vowels; hence variation ma:si/ma:zi ma:èi
‘bad’.

54 The underlying form for -thama is -tha ‘frustrative’ + -mha ‘present non-visual’.
It’s no good for us, he said.’

‘He threw him over a bush of pineapple, he got up, he cried, then his wife said to him: ‘You were hitting me, how come now you have to suffer from your equal?’

‘We have to spread, he said, we have to live elsewhere, said our grandfather.’

‘Yes, said his younger brothers, he went with them, all of them left, the same day they went and went upstream.’
nuha nu-kisi-pe-ne ka-yâ naha na-yeka-naka
\[60\] 1sg-parent-PL-AG REL-live they 3pl-know-PRES.VIS

‘Our land was over Yapura, my relatives who live there know.’

i-ya-hipe-na ahî$j waha wa-wapa-tha
\[61\] 2pl-POSS-LAND-REM.P.VIS here we 1pl-attend-FR

wa-kwa ihya-ne-naka ma-dia-kade
\[62\] 1pl-stay you-AG-PRES.VIS NEG-return-NEG

i-yema i-yeka-naka na: na-sape-naka
\[63\] 2pl-stand 2pl-know-PRES.VIS 3pl+say 3pl-speak-PRES.VIS

‘We shall attend to your land, you will not return, they say.’

na: na-sape-naka ne-nuku haw ne-yaphini-naka
\[64\] 3pl+say 3pl-speak-PRES.VIS then-TOP.NON.A/S yes then-thing-PRES.VIS

wa-yâ wa-na whameta-naka wha-ne
\[66\] 1pl-live 1pl-OBJ 1pl+think-PRES.VIS we-AG

‘They said, yes, then; we thought, this is how things are for us.’

ne-ma-dia-kade-mha wa-wapa-tha
\[67\] NEG-NEG-return-NEG-PRES.NON.VIS we 1pl-can two-TIME

wa-na whepa kasina-misini kayi na:-ka na-sape
\[68\] 1pl-OBJ 1pl+answer now+ADV-ALSO so 3pl+say-REC.P.VIS 3pl-speak

‘We can not return the second time, we answered, they have said so now.’

wa-whe-ri-nipe nhesa na-nhina
\[69\] 1pl-grandfather-PL 3pl+go.upstream 3pl+go-REM.P.SEC.H

‘Our grandfathers went upstream (to Alto Cayary, i.e. Vaupés).’

hi$j duari-numa-na kepitan-ri ololeana
\[70\] DEM:AN Duali-mouth-AFF REL+name-CONV Ololeana

kepitan-ri nhesa na pupe-ri-pani-nuku
\[71\] REL+name-CONV 3pl+go.upstream 3pl+go bacaba-CL:RAPID-TOP.NON.A/S

manaka-pina na-ri-nuki na-hwa nema açai.fruit-CL:LAND 3pl+say-CONV-TOP.NON.A/S 3pl-stay 3pl+stand
\[72\] açai.fruit-CL:LAND 3pl+say-CONV-TOP.NON.A/S 3pl-stay 3pl+stand

‘They went upstream by the mouth of Duali to the place called Ololeana to the Rapid of Bacaba fruit, they stayed at the place called ‘the land of Açai fruit’.’

pasi na-yena nesa na-nhina masipiru-taku
\[73\] another 3pl-go off 3pl+go.upstream 3pl+say-REM.P.SEC.H butterfly-CL:POINT
Another family went up to the Butterfly point, and stayed there. Another went to the Japu-island and stayed, there they stayed.

Then my grandfathers having spread, they arrived and stayed.

So we are grandchildren of those who did so, we live after [them] (lit. having followed them).

So we lived, we, Tariana, when there were no Guanano.

They lived upstream, I am saying, and we, the Tarianas, were at the headwaters, we lived up the end of the Oropendola (Japú) island.

This was the headwaters of the land, the last bit (of where Tarianas lived) it was.
(86) khida-na na: na-sape pedalia-pe ready-REM.P.VIS 3pl+say 3pl-tell old-PL

‘This is all (what) old people tell.’

**Story 2. The Deeds of the Creator.** Author: Cândido Brito

**Yapirikuri** **di-ni-mi**

Yapirikuri 3sgnf-do-NOM

‘What Yapirikuri did’55

(1) yapirikuri di-ni-mi i-na nu-kalite nu-ke=a-de
Yapirikuri 3sgdo-NOM 2pl-OBJ 1sg-tell 1sg-start-FUT

‘I shall tell you about what Yapirikuri did.’

(2) wali-kasu-nuku yapirikuri di-ni-pidana
new-INT-TOP.NON.A/S Yapirikuri 3sgnf-do-REM.P.REP

‘In the beginning Yapirikuri made this world.’

(3) ha-ehkwapi-nuku ma:i-peni alia
DEM:INAN-CL:WORLD-TOP.NON.A/S bad-PL:AN EX

(4) na-yena-niki nawiki ka-h a 3pl-exceed-COMPL people REL`a

‘There were bad ones, who ate people.’

(5) na-na-pidana hama di-wa his yapirikuri
3pl-OBJ-REM.P.REP tired 3sgnf-become DEM:AN Yapirikuri

‘Yapirikuri grew tired of them.’

(6) ira-mha pa:mie-ta thuy-niki u:ni-ne
need-PRES.NON.VIS IMP+float+CAUS-CAUS all-COMPL water-INS

(7) di-a-pidena56 diha yapirikuri
3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP he Yapirikuri

‘It is necessary to drown them all, said Yapirikuri.’

(8) kay-di-ni-sita di-amie-ta-pidena-hna
so-3sgnf-do-AFTER 3sgnf-float+CAUS-CAUS-REM.P.REP-PAUS

(9) ha-ehkwapi-nuku di-amia thuy di-a
DEM:INAN-world-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgnf-float all 3sgnf-go

55 The title in Tariana is supplied only if suggested by the speakers. For Yapi\iku\i, see §5.3.1.
56 -pidena is a variant of -pidana ‘remote past inferred’.
‘After he did so, he drowned the whole world, and all the world floated.’

(10) ne-kwaka hiku-ri sede
NEG-what appear-CONV NEG.EX

‘Nothing appeared, only one hill appeared.’

(11) hyapa hiku-pidena pa-na-ya
mountain appear-REM.P.REP one-CL:VERT-EMPH

‘On this hill all the animals came together, whichever they are, wasps, birds; the ones who joined did not find any food, all of them died.’

(12) diha-na-se-pidana na-waka hi$ ^aki
he-CL:VERT-LOC-REM.P.REP 3pl-join DEM:AN wild animal

(13) kanapada-pidana na-waka aini thuya kepiriia
how.many-REM.P.REP 3pl-join wasp all.NON.INDIV bird

(14) na-waka-kani h^akasi ma-keta-kade
3pl-join-PAST.REL.PL food NEG-meet-NEG

(15) na-yami thui na-hna
3pl-die all 3pl+go-PAUS

‘After the water remained there for a month, it began to go down until it stopped.’

(16) pa:pi-keri-seri-pidana di-ema-ka diha u:ni
one+CL:LONG-moon-SINGL-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-stand-SEQ he water

(17) di-sita di-wa di-ruku di-a-pidana-ta
3sgnf-finish 3sgnf-enter 3sgnf-go down 3sgnf-go-REM.P.REP-REP

(18) diha u:ni te di-wha di-swa-pidana
he water until 3sgnf-fall 3sgnf-stay-REM.P.REP

‘There was one month of summer heat again, this very Yapirikuri made summer.’

(19) pa:pi keri-pidana ka:muy-pita
one+CL:LONG moon-REM.P.REP summer-REP

(20) ka:muy di-emeta-pita hi$ yapirikuri-ya-ya
summer 3sgnf-stay+CAUS-REP this Yapirikuri-EMPH-EMPH

(21) wali-kasu-nuku hiku-pana-pidana
new-INT-TOP.NON.A/S appear-ALL-REM.P.REP

(22) ha-ehkwapi-pidana di-yâ yapirikuri
DEM:INAN-CL:WORLD-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-live Yapirikuri
‘In the beginning appeared the whole world, Yapi riku r lived [there].’

(23) di-ni-pidana ka:muy di-eme-ta di-sita
3sgnf-do-REM.P.REP summer 3sgnf-stay+CAUS-CAUS 3sgnf-finish

(24) dhemeta-pidana-ta disa di-nu-pidana
di-f+burn-REM.P.REP REP 3sgnf+go.up 3sgnf-come-REM.P.REP

(25) syawa u:ni ye:da-se
fire water downstream-LOC

‘He made summer heat, he burnt, again and fire went up from downstream, it went upstream, burning.’

(26) lama-pidana disa di-nu-pita
burn-REM.P.REP 3sgnf+go.upstream 3sgnf-come-REM.P.REP

(27) ha-ehkwapi-nuku di-peya-pidana nwiki
DEM:INAN-CL:WORLD-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgnf-before-REM.P.REP people

(28) di-peya syawa di-nu-naka wa-na
3sgnf-before fire 3sgnf-come-PRES.VIS 1pl-OBJ

(29) di-a-pidana di-kalite di-peya
3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-tell 3sgnf-before

‘He said before that, before the world, before the people: ‘Fire is coming to us.’’

(30) thuya ha-ehkwapeni-nuku
all.NON.INDIV DEM:INAN-CL:WORLD+PL:AN-TOP.NON.A/S

(31) nwiki-nuku di-kalite di-peya-ka-pidana
people-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgnf-tell 3sgnf-before-SEQ-REM.P.REP

(32) naha diwese-pidana lama thuy na
they then-REM.P.REP flame all 3pl+go

‘He had told all the people before, then they all burnt.’

(33) naha nwiki lama-pidana thuy na syawa-ne
they people burn-REM.P.REP all 3pl+go fire-INS

(34) lama thui di-a
burn all 3sgnf-go

‘All the people burnt in fire, everything burnt.’

(35) diha ka:li ma:iite diha-yana alia-pidana di-wapa
he Kali bad+CL:AN he-PEJ EX-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-wait
‘The bad one, Kali, was there waiting.’

(36) k:ani-tha-sina di-dawa di-a
where-FR-REM.P.NON.VIS 3sgnf-hide 3sgnf-go

(37) hipe waliku-se-pidana di-he di-a na:-na
earth inside-LOC-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-enter 3sgnf-go 3pl+say-REM.P.VIS

‘It is not known where he was hiding, they said he hid himself underneath the earth.’

(38) diha lama disa di-a-pidana
he flame 3sgnf+go.up 3sgnf-go-REM.P.REP

(39) te uni yepua-se ha-ehkwapi-nuku
until water headwaters DEM:INAN-CL:WORLD-TOP.NON.A/S

‘The flame was going up, up to the headwaters.’

(40) lama-pidana hi$ syawa lama-ka`ami di-ka
burn-REM.P.REP DEM:AN fire burn-SEQ-AFTER:DS 3sgnf-see

‘The fire was burning, after the fire burnt out he saw (that all was burnt).’

(41) kanapada-da-pe yamina-tha-sina di-a
how.many-CL:ROUND-PL day-FR-REM.P.NON.VIS 3sgnf-go

(42) di-nu-pidena yapirikuri-pita
3sgnf-come-REM.P.REP Yapirikuri-REP

(43) ha-ehkwapi-nuku di-nu-ka di-ka-hna
DEM:INAN-CL:WORLD-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgnf-come-SEQ 3sgnf-see-PAUS

(44) di-ka-pidana kwana-sika nawiki ketemi
3sgnf-see-REM.P.REP INTER-PRES.INFR people rest

‘Nobody knows how many days passed. Yapirikuri came to the world again. He came to see how many people remained.’

(45) di-a di-ka-ka-pidana
3sgnf-go 3sgnf-see-SEQ-REM.P.REP

(46) diha kali-yâna kiniki di-pana-ka-pidana
he Kali-PEJ maniva 3sgnf-plant-SEQ-REM.P.REP

(47) hi$ kiniki-pena-nuku
DEM:AN maniva-NOM.FUT-TOP.NON.A/S

57 See §5.3.1.
'He went to see that the mischievous Kali was planting what was to become maniva (bitter manioc), he took and put inside [the ground] maniva, potato, yam, banana, pineapple.'
staying, you will suffer a lot with people [with whom] you will eat’, he said. Having
done so, he said: ‘Here are the animals to be your food. They are coming back.’

(63) neːri hema aːpia puːwe iːiri thuya
dere tapir wild pig monkey game all.NON.INDIV

(64) hi$ kara kuiːi yaːiri āsine
DEM:AN REL+fly curassow guan agami

(65) di-pitaneta-pidana thui-niki naha iːiri-nuku
3sgnf-name+CAUS-REM.P.REP all-COMPL they game-
TOP.NON.A/S

‘All the animals, deer, tapir, wild pigs, monkeys, the ones who fly — curassow, guan,
agami — he gave names to all the game.’

(66) di-pumi-se di-a-pidana hi$ kuːphe-nuku
3sgnf-after-LOC 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP DEM:AN fish-TOP.NON.A/S

(67) hi$ katu kuːri keraːni pe
DEM:AN piraiba sorubim pacú.brando

(68) kasama tari yapa iːiri daruyu-pidana
pacú.pretó aracú tucunare traira pirarucú-REM.P.REP

(69) di-pitaneta diha-pidana di-pitaneta
3sgnf-name+CAUS he-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-name+CAUS

(70) hi$ kuːphe kasina kepitaːna-kaːru-pena-nuku
DEM:AN fish now REL+name-PURP-NOM.FUT-TOP.NON.A/S

‘Then he gave name to the fish - piraiba, sorubim, pacú branco, pacú preto, aracú,
tucunare, traira, pirarucú, so that they have a name.’

(71) di-pitaneta-pidana di-sita-pidana
3sgnf-name+CAUS 3sgnf-finish-REM.P.REP

(72) hi$ haiku-nuku di-pana
DEM:AN tree-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgnf-plant

‘He finished naming them, he planted this tree.’

(73) phia pi-sapeta pi-h`a-mhade hi$-nuku
you 2sg-suffer 2sg-eat-PROB.FUT DEM:AN-TOP.NON.A/S

(74) haiku-nuku pi-uka pi-sapeta
tree-TOP.NON.A/S 2sg-arrive 2sg-suffer

(75) kaːmuy-ka pika pi-pana pi-h`a-mhade napi
summer-SEQ 2sg+see 2sg-plant 2sg-eat-PROB.FUT 3pl+with
"You will suffer eating from this tree, when it is summer, you will see, and plant and stay with them (i.e. people) now’, he told him, scolding him.’

‘So he told him, and let him stay, he (Kali) remained near the people, he remained for people to have food.’

‘He did (it), he has a house in Kalipani (Kali rapids, Rapids above Querarí), the name of this hill is Maliëi, on this hill he lives.’

‘Near it there was a stone called Kainikida, I saw it now, too; so he lived there.’

58 The verb -kwisa means ‘scold’; a serial verb construction -ka -kwisa (see scold) means ‘hate’.
(90) di-yâ kiniki dinipe i-api
3sgnf-live maniva 3sgnf+children INDF-with

(91) di-hpâni di-api di-h*$a-pidâna di-yâ-nhi
3sgnf-work 3sgnf+with 3sgnf+eat-REM.P.REP 3sgnf+stay-ANT

'He lived there with his children, working and eating with him [his son].'

(92) ne dirinu ne ma:-kade-pidâna
then 3sgnf+son+ wife NEG NEG+go-NEG-REM.P.REP

(93) inasu-ite-pidâna nu-a-ka nuha
lazy-CL:AN-REM.P.REP I

(94) ne-mehpâni-kadite alia-pidâna nuha nu-a-ka
NEG-NEG+work-NEG+CL:AN EX-REM.P.REP I 1sg-say-SEQ

'His daughter-in-law (lit. son’s wife) was no good, she was lazy, I am saying, not working, I am saying.'

(95) kasina-nuku di-a-pidâna di-nu-khâni-pidâna
now+ADV-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgnf-go-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-come-AWAY-REM.P.REP

(96) wyaka-se h*$a-ka-si di-nu-ka di-uma-pidâna
far-LOC eat-TH-NOM 3sgnf-come-SEQ 3sgnf-seek-REM.P.REP

'Now he (Kali) went, he went away, he went far away to look for food.'

(97) kay-ka-pidâna di-ni-niki nu-a-ka di-na
so-SEQ-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-do-COMPL 1sg-say-SEQ 3sgnf-OBJ

(98) diri-nuku di-na-ka di-ka-pidâna
3sgnf+son-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgnf-want-DECL 3sgnf-see-REM.P.REP

'He did so, I am saying, just to see how the son will manage.'

(99) kay di-ni pi-na h*$a-ka-si nu-sue-ta-de
so 3sgnf-do 2sg-OBJ eat-TH-NOM 1sg-stay+CAUS-CAUS-FUT

(100) di-a-pidâna dirinu-nuku
3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgnf+son+wife-TOP.NON.A/S

'I shall leave you the food’, he said to his daughter-in-law.’

(101) haw di-a-tha-pidâna di-sue-ta
yes 3sgnf-say-FR-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-stay+CAUS-CAUS

(102) hî§ di-kawana pa-dokholari-nuku
DEM:AN 3sgnf-leg IMP-joint-TOP.NON.A/S

(103) pa-kawana pa-dokholari-nuku di-sueta-tha-pidâna
IMP-leg IMP-joint-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgnf-stay+CAUS-CAUS-FR-REM.P.REP
(104) diha di-a-pidena duha du-a-pidena-hna
he 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP she 3sgf-say-REM.P.REP-PAUS

(105) phia ha-niri59 nu-na nu-ite-seka dhipa
you parent-MASC 1sg-OBJ 1sg-POSS:AN-PRES.INFR 3sgnf-take

(106) dhipa ha-niri
you parent-MASC 1sg-OBJ 1sg-POSS:AN-PRES.INFR 3sgnf-take

(107) phia ha-niri
you parent-MASC 1sg-OBJ 1sg-POSS:AN-PRES.INFR 3sgnf-take

(108) kezu-pidana di-yena di-a ha-niri-nuku
angry-REM.P.REP 3sgnf+hear she 3sgf-spouse-MASC-TOP.NON.A/S

‘When her husband heard her say so, he became angry at his father.’

(109) di-dia-ka di-uca di-kwisa-pidana diiri-hna
3sgnf-return-SEQ 3sgnf-chegar 3sgnf-scold-REM.P.REP son-PAUS

‘When he (father) returned, the son scolded him.’

(110) phia pai nu-sa-do-nuku hi$ku-pidaka
you Dad:VOC 1sg-spouse-FEM-TOP.NON.A/S so-REC.P.SEC.H

(111) pi-ni phia phipa-pidaka phima phia
2sg-do you 2sg+take-REC.P.SEC.H 2sg+hear,try you

(112) di-a-pidana di-pumina di-kwisa-pidana
3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-punish 3sgnf-scold-REM.P.REP

‘After that he scolded him, [saying] ‘You, Dad, (reportedly) have done like this to my wife, you (reportedly) have tried to grab [her]’, he said, punishing him by scolding.’

(113) kay di-ni-ka thepe di-wa-pidana
so 3sgnf-do-SEQ annoyed 3sgnf-become-REM.P.REP

(114) diha kali di-nu-khani-pidana
he Kali 3sgnf-come-AWAY-REM.P.REP

(115) na-na di-dawa-pidana-niki de:pi
3pl-OBJ 3sgnf-hide-REM.P.REP-COMPL night

59 Kinship terms ‘father’ and ‘mother’ sometimes take possessive prefixes (e.g. nu-ha-ni \i 1sg-parent-MASC ‘my father’), and sometimes do not (e.g. nuha ha-ni \i I parent-MASC ‘my father’).

60 Lit. ‘mine’, ‘my (animate) thing’; this is a widespread euphemism used to refer to one’s sexual organs.
'After he did this, Kali became annoyed and went away, he hid himself from them at night.'

(116) kay di-ni diha-da-nuku
so 3sgnf-do he-CL:ROUND-TOP.NON.A/S

(117) di-sue-ta-ka-tha-pidana h˘a-ka-si
3sgnf-stay+CAUS-CAUS-SEQ-FR struggling eat-TH-NOM

(118) di-sue-ta-ka y˘a:hari na:nite
3sgnf-stay+CAUS-CAUS-DECL small.toad 3pl+say+TOP.ADV+CL:AN

(119) di-sueta-pidana
3sgnf-stay+CAUS-CAUS-REM.P.REP

‘Having done so, he put the round one (i.e. manioc) (to no avail), having put out food, he put a small toad [there].’

(120) nu-dia-ka nu-nuh˘i y˘a:hari
1sg-return-SEQ 1sg-come DEM:AN small.toad

(121) kayu-mhade pi:ma nuha di-a-pidana
like-PROB.FUT emit.sound I 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

(122) ne diha-da-nuku nuha
then he-CL:ROUND-TOP.NON.A/S I

(123) nu-sue-ta-ni-da-nuku
1sg-stay+CAUS-CAUS-TOP.ADV-CL:ROUND-TOP.NON.A/S

(124) pi-mare-niki di-a-pidana
2sg-swallow+CAUS-COMPL 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

‘When I come back, I will emit a sound like this small toad (does),’ he said, ‘then you swallow the round one which I put [here].’

(125) diha yapirikuri-a˘a˘a-pidena di-na
he Yapirikuri-PEJ-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-OBJ

(126) di-ma˘e-ta-nha
3sgnf-cheat+CAUS-CAUS-PAUS

‘Yapirikuri, the bad one, cheated him.’

(127) kay diha di-a-ka dhima wanari yapirikuri
so he 3sgnf-say-SEQ 3sgnf+hear wanari yapirikuri

61 The use of frustrative shows that Kali’s efforts to provide his son and his wife with food will not achieve the result he intended.

62 Here, just like in Story 3, the mythical being does not give things to people in an obvious way: they always appear in ‘disguise’.
(128) na:nite-pidana  di-mayana
 3pl+say+TOP.ADV+CL:AN-REM.P.REP 3pl-cheat

‘The one called Wanari Yapirikuri heard what he said, and he cheated.’

(129) diha  di-a-mi  kayu-pidana  dihmeriku
  he  3sgnf-say-NOM so-REM.P.REP 3sgnf+make.noise

(130) hi$  ya:hari  kayu-pidana  pi:ma
 DEM:AN small.toad so-REM.P.REP emit.sound

‘He made the noise [Kali] was talking about, he emitted a sound similar to that of the small toad.’

(131) wowo-pidana  pima  diha  ya:hari  hi$-nuku
 wowo-REM.P.REP emit.sound  he  small.toad DEM:AN-TOP.NON.A/S

(132) phima  pi-a-nhi  diha-da-nuku  pi-mare-niki
 2sg+hear 2sg-say-ANT he-CL:ROUND-TOP.NON.A/S 2sg-go.down+CAUS-COMPL

(133) di-a-pidana  diha-ki-pidena  pima
  3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP he-so-REM.P.REP emit.sound

‘Wowo, sounded the toad. ‘When you hear it, swallow the round one, he said, and it sounded just like that.’

(134) wanari  yapirikuri-`aˆ-a-pidana  di-mayana haw
 wanari  yapirikuri-PEJ-REM.P.REP3pl-cheat yes

‘Wanari Yapirikuri cheated.’

(135) di-a-pidena  di-mare-niki  hyukade-pidana
  3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-go.down+CAUS-COMPL not.appear-REM.P.REP

‘Yes, he (the son) said, and swallowed. Nothing happened.’

(136) yuwapiku  mhesiki  di-`ami-pidana  di-a-nha
 some.time hunger  3sgnf-die-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-go-PAUS

(137) ne-sede-pidana  di-h`a-nipe
  NEG-NEG.EX-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-eat-NOM

(138) ne-kwaka  di-h`a-nipe  sede-pidana
  NEG-what  3sgnf-eat-NOM NEG.EX-REM.P.REP

‘Some time after he was starving. There was no food, no food whatsoever.’

(139) di-h`a-nipe  sede-ka  di-ka-pidena
  3sgnf-eat-NOM NEG.EX-SEQ 3sgnf-see-REM.P.REP

(140) di-nu  di-uma-hna
‘When he saw that there was no food, he went to look for it.’

(141) kani-se-ka di-a nuha ha-niri
where-LOC-DECL 3sgnf-go parent-MASC parent-MASC

(142) di-a-pidana ha-ehkwapi-nuku
3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP DEM:INAN-CL:WORLD TOP.NON.A/S

(143) di-uma-tha-pidana ne-ma-keta-kade-pidana
3sgnf-look for-FR-REM.P.REP NEG-NEG-meet-NEG-REM.P.REP

(144) di-nu-pidana di-dia di-nu
3sgnf-come-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-return 3sgnf-come

‘Where is it that my father went’, he said. He looked over the whole world in vain, and did not find him, and came back.’

(145) ne-pidana di-keta-hna diha ku:phe
then-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-meet-PAUS he fish

(146) dinu-nipe-nuku di-keta-pidana di-ne di-yā-ka
3sgnf+kill-NOM-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgnf-meet-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-INS 3sgnf-live-SEQ

(147) diha ku:phe dinu-nipe-nuku diha di-yeka-pidana
he fish 3sgnf+kill-NOM-TOP.NON.A/S he 3sgnf-know-REM.P.REP

‘Then he found his father’s fishing, he found it; when he lived with him, he knew [his way of] fishing.’

(148) diri hi$j kwaka di-ni dinu
3sgnf+son DEM:AN what 3sgnf-do 3sgnf+kill

(149) di-yā-ka hi$j paika di-a-pidana
3sgnf-stay-SEQ DEM:AN father:REF 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

‘He said, the son, ‘This is how my father fishes (lit. kills [fish]).’

(150) ne-pidana di-wapa-hna
then-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-wait-PAUS

‘So he waited.’

(151) mhāida piaka-pidana diha di-mār a.little now-REM.P.REP he 3sgnf-go.downstream 3sgnf-come

(152) hiku-nha di-ɛrapa-pidana
appear-PAUS 3sgnf-sing-REM.P.REP

(153) di-mār di-nu-hna
Soon after he (Kali) came downstream singing.’

‘This is really my father, he (the son) said.’

‘He waited for him.’

‘In spite of going downstream, Kali felt that he was there (lit. felt him).’

‘He stayed afloat.’

‘Then he (Kali) pushed with a spear, there was game in the trap he had made, he tried to drag it down, and made it fall (into the canoe).’

‘Then he turned around and went up.’

63Negative -de is a variant of negative -kade in rapid speech.
'He did not want to see his son.'

(165) nuha ha-niya-naka di-a-pidena
I parent-MASC+EMPH-PRES.VIS 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

'It is my father, he (the son) said.'

(166) dyeku di-a-pidana di-hwa-thepi di-a
3sgnf+run 3sgnf-go-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-fall-TO.WATER 3sgnf-go

(167) diha ita-whya-se dhipa-pidana
he canoe-CL:CANOE-LOC 3sgnf+grab-REM.P.REP

'He (son) ran, fell into water, grabbed the canoe.'

(168) pi-na nu-pe-ka nu-pe-sita nhua
2sg-OBJ 1sg-leave-REC.P.VIS 1sg-leave-PERF I

(169) di-a-pidana di-na
3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-OBJ

'I have already abandoned you, said (the father) to him.'

(170) halemi di-ni-dhala di-ruku-i-nipe di-na
all.the.time 3sgnf-do-UNSTICK 3sgnf-fall-CAUS-ALL.TIME 3sgnf-OBJ

'He let him unstick (off the canoe) and fall all the time.'

(171) kwe ma-ni-kade di-yeka-hna
INT NEG-do-NEG 3sgnf-know-PAUS

'He (the son) didn’t know what to do.'

(172) ita-whya yapise-pidana
canoe-CL:CANOE under-REM.P.REP

(173) kapatu di-mai-ka di-hwa de:ru di-a-hna
bodo 3sgnf-bad-TH 3sgnf-stay hang 3sgnf-go-PAUS

'He turned into a bodo (type of sucker-fish), and was hanging underneath the canoe.'

(174) di-dena disa di-a-pidana
3sgnf-paddle 3sgnf+go.up 3sgnf-go-REM.P.REP

'(His father) was paddling upstream.'

(175) hamia-ma-pidena dihmeta-ka
heavy-EXC-REM.P.REP 3sgnf+think-SEQ

(176) kwaka-tha diha di-a dhipa
what-INTER.NON.VIS he 3sgnf-say 3sgnf+take
‘He felt the weight. ‘What is it?’ he said and grabbed [it].’

(177) diha ita-whya i-kuda-nuku dhipa he canoe-CL:CANOE INDF-body-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgnf+grab

(178) di-uma-pidena dhipa di-keta-pidena di-na 3sg-look.for-REM.P.REP 3sgnf+grab 3sgnf-meet-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-OBJ

(179) dhipa di-keta-pidena dhita di-pala 3sgnf+grab 3sgnf-meet-REM.P.REP 3sgnf+take 3sgnf-put

(180) dhita di-pala disa di-a 3sgnf+take 3sgnf-go.up 3sgnf-go

(181) hipa-kwa di-keta-pidana ne-pidana stone-CL:FLAT.SURFACE 3sgnf-meet-REM.P.REP then-REM.P.REP

(182) di-patu di-uka di-na di-kwisa-pidana 3sgnf-put.ashore 3sgnf-arrive 3sgnf-OBJ 3sgnf-scold-REM.P.REP

‘He grabbed the canoe, searched [it], found and grabbed him, grabbed him, got him and went upstream, found a flat stone, put the canoe ashore and scolded him (the son).’

(183) ner:i phia manihta-de-naka hi$kku-ka-pena-ka phia son:VOC you NEG+think-NEG-PRES.VIS so-DECL-NOM.FUT-SEQ you

(184) ne-pa-kalite-ka haw ma-kade-ka phia NEG-IMP-speak-SEQ yes NEG+say,do-NEG-SEQ you

(185) di-a-pidana di-na di-kwisa 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-OBJ 3sgnf-scold ‘He said, scolding him: ‘Son, you do not think going to be like this, when one tells you (what to do), you do not do [it].’

(186) di-ya:-pidana diha diri kayu di-a-ka di-kwisa 3sgnf-cry-REM.P.REP he 3sgnf+son so 3sgnf-say-SEQ 3sgnf-scold ‘The son cried when he scolded him.’

(187) ne-pidana di-na i$ra-ka-si di$eta-daka then-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-OBJ drink-TH-NOM 3sgnf+drink+CAUS-YET ‘Then he (Kali) still gave him a drink.’

(188) ëome ka-kama-pidena nesa na: much REL-be.drunk-REM.P.REP 3pl+go.up 3pl+go ‘They went upstream very drunk.’
(189) kasina-nuku phia pi-dia pi-a
now+ADV-TOP.NON.A/S you 2sg-return 2sg-go

(190) di-a-pidena di-na
3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-OBJ

“Now you can go back’, he (father) said to him.’

(191) nuha nu-a-de pa:-da-de nu-a di-a-pidena
I 1sg-say-FUT one-CL:ROUND-FUT 1sg-go 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

‘I will go, will go the next day, he said.’

(192) diwese-se-nuku naha ya-rana-kayu na-wa-nipe
then-LOC-TOP.NON.A/S they white.people-like 3pl-count-NOM

(193) sede-nhina ehkwapi-pe-nuku-pidena na-wa
NEG.EX-REM.P.SEC.H day-PL-TOP.NON.A/S-REM.P.REP 3pl-count

(194) na-ya-nhi diha-kada diha-kada-pidana
3pl-stay-ANT he-CL:DAY he-CL:DAY-REM.P.REP

(195) na-wa na-yã-nhi
3pl-count 3pl-stay-ANT

‘At that time there was no counting like among white people, they counted day by day, one day, one [more] day, they counted.’

(196) haw di-a di-a-pidana diha ka:pina-pidena
yes 3sgnf-do 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP he garden-REM.P.REP

(197) diretâ diha
3sgnf+need+CAUS he

“Yes’, he said, and went; he (Kali) ordered to make a garden.’

(198) haw di-a disa di-a-pidana di-ni
yes 3sgnf-say 3sgnf+go.up 3sgnf-go-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-do

(199) naha na-ã-a-mi-nuku
they 3pl-hit-NOM-TOP.NON.A/S

(200) diretâ-mi kayu-pidana di-ni diha
3sgnf+need+CAUS-NOM like-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-do he

‘Yes, he said, he went up, and made the one for them to harvest (garden), he (the son) did it according to the order.’

(201) pa-da yamina-pidena di-uka-hna
one-CL:ROUND day-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-arrive-PAUS

‘A day later he (father) arrived.’
(202) pemem-kapi-kada-pida  

one side-HAND-CL:DAY-PL-REM.P.REP  

summer

(203) die-me-ta-hna  

3sgnf+stand+CAUS-CAUS-PAUS

‘Father made five days of summer heat.

(204) dy-u-kapida  

3sgnf-arrive-REM.P.REP  

3sgnf-arrive-REM.P.REP  

3sgnf-see

(205) kapina, pi-ni-niha  

phia  ner  

3sgnf-go-REM.P.REP

‘He arrived, ‘You have made the garden, son’, he said.’

(206) nu-ni-ka  

pai  di-a-pida  

1sg-do-REC.P.VIS  Dad:VOC  3sgnf-go-REM.P.REP

‘I have, Dad’, he (the son) said.’

(207) maia-naka  

kasina  wya-nuku  

3sgnf-go-REM.P.REP

‘Now it is good, he said.’

(208) wasa  whamita-hna  

ikau  di-a-pida  

let’s  1pl+burn-IMPV  now  3sgnf-go-REM.P.REP

‘Now let’s burn (it), he said.’

(209) na-pida  

diriu  diha diha kali diha ha-niri  

3pl+go-REM.P.REP  3sgnf+son+wife he he Kali he parent-MASC

‘There went the daughter-in-law, he himself, Kali and the father.’

(210) di-u  

di-ki  

3sgnf-arrive  3sgnf-dress.up-REM.P.REP

‘He (Kali) arrived and dressed up.’

(211) hinipuku  

i-thirikuna  

3sgnf-dress.up-REM.P.REP

‘He dressed up himself at the edge of the garden.’

(212) nu-na  

ai  

i-wapa-daka  

nu-ki  

kasu  di-pida  

1sg-OBJ  here  2pl-wait-YET  1sg-dress.up-INT 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

‘You wait for me to dress up’, he said.’

(213) daruphema  

di-tu  

wayapa  

di-tu
'He tied a feather headdress, he tied a leg adornment, he dressed up with all [this].'

'He took the ritual stick, he took the spear. ‘It is good, son. I will stay in the middle of the garden’, he said. ‘Yes’, he (the son) said.'

‘Here is a bundle of ‘turí’, it said.'

‘Drag this bundle of turí to the edge of the garden’, he said.'

‘Yes’, he (father) remained standing in the middle of the garden.

‘He entered into [a hole in an] imbauba-tree and stayed there.’

‘Yes’, he said, and went to see there.'

64 Plant used for lighting fire.
(225) sede-pidana mesape-naki
    NEG.EX-REM.P.REP turi-CL:BUNDLE
‘There was no bundle of turí.’

(226) mawari-mia-pidana di-swa
    snake-ONLY-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-stay
‘There was only a snake.’

(227) wade-pidena di-h`a-ka meca-pidana di-perita
    maybe-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-eat-SEQ indeed-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-lick
‘It may eat (me) up, it is ‘licking its lips” [he thought].

(228) kay di-a di-dia di-nu-pita
    so 3sgnf-go 3sgnf-return 3sgnf-come-AGAIN
‘So he returned.’

(229) pai mesape-naki ma-keta-de-mahka nuha
    Dad:VOC turi-CL:BUNDLE NEG-meet-NEG-REC.P.NON.VIS I
(230) di-a-pidena mawari-mia-ka
    3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP snake-ONLY-REC.P.VIS
(231) di-swa diha ne-nuku di-a-pidena
    3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP he then-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP
‘Dad, I did not find the bundle of turí, there is only a snake there’, he said.’

(232) kweka-hna karu phia di-numa-se phipa
    how-INTER.PRES.VIS be.afraid you 3sgnf-mouth-LOC 2sg+take
(233) pi-apita phia pi-a di-a-pidena
    2sg-drag you 2sg-go 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP
‘Why are you afraid, take (it) by its mouth, and drag (it)’, he said.’

(234) haw di-a-pidana direta-mi kayu-pidana
    yes 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgnf+need+CAUS-NOM like-REM.P.REP
(235) di-apita diha-ya
    3sgnf-drag he-EMPH
‘Yes’, he said, he dragged (the snake) according to the order.’

65 Lines 229 and 230 illustrate the difference between the non-visual and visual evidential: the non-visual evidential is used to refer to a bundle of turí — which the son did not see — and the visual evidential refers to the snake — which he did see, instead of the turi.
(236) diha di-a-hna di-apita diha-pidana hî$$
    syawa
    he 3sgnf-do-PAUS 3sgnf-drag he-REM.P.REP DEM:AN fire

(237) lama hiku-pidana kerapheda
    flame appear-REM.P.REP glimmer

(238) lama di-pinita-ka-pidana
    flame 3sgnf-follow-SEQ-REM.P.REP

‘He was dragging, and the flame appeared glimmering, the fire was following him.

(239) pi-ka pi-api piha pi-a mayakani pi-dia-kha
    2sg-see 2sg-drag you 2sg-go straight 2sg-return-AWAY

(240) pi-a di-a-pidena na-na haw di-a-pidena
    2sg-go 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 3pl-OBJ yes 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

‘Make sure you drag, go on straight and return’, he said to them (the son and his wife).
‘Yes’, he (the son) said.’

(241) di-ni-mi kayu-pidena di-ni
    3sgnf-do so-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-do

‘He did as he (father) did.’

(242) di-apita diha lama-pidana
    3sgnf-drag he flame-REM.P.REP

‘He was dragging, and the flame was burning.’

(243) mhai $da pi-kapuku pi-ka nu-na di-a-pidena
    PROH 2sg-turn 2sg-see 1sg-OBJ 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

(244) i-ka-mhade ihya di-a-pidana
    2pl-see-PROB.FUT you:pl 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

‘Don’t look back at me’, he said, ‘you will probably look at me [but don’t]’.

(245) diha di:reta-mi kayu-tha-pidana di-ni diha iîäri
    he 3sgnf+need+CAUS-NOM so-FR-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-do he man

‘The man tried to do as he was told.’

(246) dirinu hî$ ina:
    3sgnf+son+wife DEM:AN woman:PL

(247) manihta-kade-kaâu-pena apare-pidena na-ke`a
    NEG+think-NEG-PURP-NOM.FUT elsewhere-REM.P.REP 3pl-start

(248) kasina-misini-nuku kayu-maka nha ina: manihta-kade
But the daughter-in-law, these women do not think, they always start by the other end, now too, so the women do not think, and in the beginning their deeds were like this.

Let’s return, he said (the son), when she was returning, she turned back to see, the daughter-in-law.

‘My father in law!’ she said, cherishing him.

‘All the plantation started burning, all was burning.’

‘It (the imbauba tree) split, it split, and Kali came out.’

‘Pa! He went out and returned straight home.

‘He was in the house before them, he had already returned.’
(260) di-pumi-se-pidena diha diri di-dia
3sgnf-follow-LOC-CONTR-REM.P.REP he 3sgnf+son 3sgnf-return

(261) di-uka-hna di-ka-pidana harame di-a
3sgnf-arrive-PAUS 3sgnf-see-REM.P.REP be.scared 3sgnf-go
‘The son arrived after him, he was scared to see’

(262) io! nu-ha-niri lama-ka di-a diha hinipuku-se
oh! 1sg-parent-MASC flame-REC.P.VIS 3sgnf-go he garden-LOC

(263) di-a-pidana hanipa-pidana dihmetsa diri-ne
3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP big+CL:CL.SP-REM.P.REP 3sgnf+think 3sgnf+son-AG
‘Oh! My father is burning in the garden, he said, the son thought a lot.’

(264) lama-nihka ka:pina di-a
flame-REC.P.INFR garden 3sgnf-go

(265) pai lama-ka di-a di-a-pidena
Dad:VOC flame-REC.P.VIS 3sgnf-go 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP
‘The garden must be burning’ (said Kali). “Dad, it is burning’, he (the son) said.’

(266) maia-sika di-a-pidana
good-PRES.INFR 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP
‘It must be good’, he (Kali) said.’

(267) pa-da ya:mina kiniki pa-pada-pidana
one-CL:ROUND day maniva one-CL:PIECE-REM.P.REP
‘The next day there was one piece of manioc.’

(268) pamu`a-ma`a pi-musu pi-a pi-pana
middle-mid 2sg-go.out 2sg-go 2sg-plant

(269) diha-pada-nuku di-a-pidana
he-CL:PIECE-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP
‘Go in the middle of the garden, plant this piece’, he (Kali) said.’

(270) haw di-a-pidana diha di:reta-mi kayu-pidena
yes 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP he 3sgnf+need+CAUS-NOM so-REM.P.REP

(271) di-a-pidana di-uka di-pana di-sita
3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-arrive 3sgnf-plant 3sgnf-finish
‘Yes, he said, he did in agreement with what he said, he went and planted.’

(272) mhai$da pi-a pi-ka di-a-pidana
‘He (Kali) said, ‘Don’t look’.

‘He did as his father told him to. Three days after he said, ‘Let’s go and see how our garden is’.

‘He went out — it was all full of manioc.’

‘It was really in time for harvest.’

‘Everything was there — potato, yam, banana, pepper, sweet potato —, he planted everything.’

‘Now it is good’, he (Kali) said.’

‘Now you tear the manioc, he said to her’

‘Yes, said the daughter-in-law.’

‘Yes, said the daughter-in-law.’
‘She tore (the manioc) out, and the peel came off and stayed in the ground.’

‘The manioc came out as if it were well peeled.’

‘She returned, left the aturá-basket (with manioc).’

‘Daughter in law, you make (prepare) the manioc, then eat’, he said in vain.’

‘He did try to tell her, I am saying.’

‘So parents say now, too: don’t do it, my daughter, and they do not listen.’

---

66 A basket carried on the back and held by a strap across the forehead.
where 3pl+go-CONV 3pl+go-PRES.NON.VIS-COMPL

‘They go where they go (i.e. they have their own way).’

(297) diha-niri di-kalite-ka-ya i:na
he-father 3sgnf-tell-SEQ-EMPH women:PL

(298) kani na:ri na:-mha-niki
where 3pl+say-CONV 3pl+go-PRES.NON.VIS-COMPL

‘The father does tell the women (what to do), but they go everywhere.’

(299) a:pare di-thanina-se nha kay-na-ni-mi-pidana
elsewhere 3sgnf-edge+ADV-LOC they so-3pl-do-NOM-REM.P.REP

(300) hi$s na: na-sape-na hi$s pedalia-pei
DEM:AN 3pl+say 3pl-tell-REM.P.VIS DEM:AN old-PL

‘They (women) did so from the very beginning, as old people say.’

(301) kayu-maka na-ka hi$s ina: pa-kalite-ka
so-AFF 3pl+go-SEQ DEM:AN woman:PL IMP-tell-SEQ

(302) mhema-kade-naka na:
NEG+hear-NEG-PRES.VIS 3pl+go

‘So they go, and do not listen to what they are told.’

(303) haw duha du-hˆa-pidana-niki
yes she 3sgf-eat-REM.P.REP-COMPL
‘So she ate (it).’

(304) ne-pidena di-ya di-maïi-ka thui di-hwa di-a
then-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-skin 3sgnf-bad-TH all 3sgnf-fall 3sgnf-go

(305) diha di-dia-pidana thui di-a di-ya
he 3sgnf-return-REM.P.REP all 3sgnf-go 3sgnf-skin

(306) alia-peri-mia di-tuka di-dia-niki
EX-PL:INAN-ONLY 3sgnf-break 3sgnf-return-COMPL

‘Then the peel turned back onto the manioc, it became covered with peel again.’

(307) na-khaka-tha-pidena ne-ma-sita-de-pidana
3pl-peel/scratch-FR-REM.P.REP NEG-NEG-finish-NEG-REM.P.REP

‘They tried to peel it, but did not manage.’

(308) ka:-pidana de:pi na-ka na-hwa-niki
so-REM.P.REP night 3pl+go-SEQ 3pl-stay-COMPL

‘They were staying doing this till it was night.’

(309) ne pa-kalite-ka mhema-ka-de-naka ihia di-a-pidana
NEG IMP-tell-SEQ NEG+hear-NEG-PRES.VIS you:pl 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

‘He said, ‘You do not listen to what you are told.’

(310) kasina wya-nuku i ra-mha pa:-khani
now+ADV then-TOP.NON.A/S need-PRES.NON.VIS IMP+go-AWAY

(311) di-a-pidana di-a-pidana di-ma̱ra
3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-float.down

(312) di-nu-lı̱na na-na di-dawa-pidana-niki
3sgnf-come-PAUS 3pl-OBJ 3sgnf-hide-REM.P.REP-COMPL

‘Now I have to go away’ he said, he said and went downstream, he hid from them.’

(313) di-ma̱ra di-nu diha kali-pani
3sgnf-float.down 3sgnf-comehe Kali-CL:RAPID

(314) ka-yā-kali di-ma̱ra di-nu te iku-ri na
REL-live-PASTREL 3sgnf-float.down 3sgnf-cometill turtle-CL:VERT

‘He floated downstream from Kali rapids where he lived up to the hill of Turtle.’

(315) ne-pidena i ku-ri itu-nuku
then-REM.P.REP turtle daughter-TOP.NON.A/S

(316) di-keta-pidana na-wana na-whe-ta-pidana
3sgnf-meet-REM.P.REP 3pl-call 3pl-stay+CAUS-CAUS-REM.P.REP

‘Then he met the daughter of the Turtle, they called him to stay there.’

(317) di-ma̱ra di-nu
3sgnf-float.down 3sgnf-come

‘He was floating downstream.’

(318) nu-ine pi-dia phia duhua-ka-sika
1sg-INSTR 2sg-stay you she-SEQ-PRES.INFR

(319) ma-nihta-kade duha kayu ne-ma-ni-kasu nuha
NEG-think-NEG she so NEG-NEG-do-INT I

(320) du-a-pidena di-na du-mayā-pidana
3sgf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-OBJ 3sgf-cheat-REM.P.REP

‘Stay with me, she (son’s wife) apparently does not think, I won’t do like she did, said she, cheating him.’
(321) upi-mia-pidena  ne-misini  du-ni-pidena  duha-pita  
old-ONLY-REM.P.REP  then-TOO  3sgf-do-REM.P.REP  she-REP  

‘Then she also did the same thing.’

(322) pa-ita-pidana  ne-nuku  kenipe-pidana  
one-CL:AN-REM.P.REP  then-TOP.NON.A/S  REL+child-REM.P.REP

(323) ìã̃r̩i-pidana  hinipuku-se  du-a-ka  
man-REM.P.REP  garden-LOC  3sgf-go-SEQ

(324) ka:me-se-pidena  du-pala  di-na  
basket-LOC-REM.P.REP  3sgf-put  3sgnf-OBJ

‘Then he had a child with her, it was a boy; when she went to work in a garden, she put him into a basket.’

(325) ai-nuku  du-deka-tha-pidena  
here-TOP.NON.A/S  3sgf-carry-FR-REM.P.REP

(326) ka:me-nuku  du-anapi  
basket-TOP.NON.A/S  3sgf-put.on.back

‘There she carried [him], she put the basket on her back.’

(327) diha  kali  di-ka-ka  mawari  i-numa-p̣-pidana  
he  Kali  3sgnf-see-SEQ  cobra  INDF-mouth-AUG-REM.P.REP

‘When Kali saw (it), it was a mouth of a big snake.’

(328) mawari  di-hwâ-ka-pidena  dihya-tuki-nuku  
snake  3sgnf+bite-SEQ-REM.P.REP  he-DIM-TOP.NON.A/S

(329) diha  mawari  di-hwâ-ka-pidena  
he  snake  3sgnf+bite-SEQ-REM.P.REP

(330) diha  yanape  di-ya-pidana  
he  child  3sgnf-cry-REM.P.REP

‘The snake was biting the child, biting, and the child cried.’

(331) nuha  kayi-wani-pu-kasu  upi-mia-naka  
I  so-REALLY-AUG-INT  old-ONLY-PRES.VIS

(332) nu-na  du-ni-naka  hĩ̃-misini  di-a-nhina  
1sg-OBJ  du-ni-naka  DEM:AN-TOO  3sgf-say-REM.P.SEC.H

(333) ne-nuku  du-na  di-pe-nhina-niki  
then-TOP.NON.A/S  3sgf-OBJ  3sgfnf-leave-REM.P.SEC.H-COMPL

(334) duha  ikuri  itu-nuku  
she  turtle  daughter-TOP.NON.A/S
“She is really acting in the same way, this one, too’ (he thought). Then he left her, the daughter of the Turtle.’

(335) ne-nhina de:pi-pe di-dawa ne-misini-nuku
then-REM.P.SEC.H night-PL 3sgnf-hide then-TOO-TOP.NON.A/S

(336) du-na di-dawa di-mara di-nu
3sgf-OBJ 3sgnf-hide 3sgnf-float 3sgnf-come

(337) te hi $ kali waliru-na
until DEM:AN Kali evil.spirit-CL:VERT

‘Then at night he hid from her, he hid from her, and went floating downstream until the mountain of Evil Spirit.’

(338) waliru itu-naku di-keta-pita
evil.spirit daughter-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgnf-meet-REP

‘He met the daughter of the Evil spirit again.’

(339) duha-pidena du-wana du-we-ta di-na
she-REM.P.REP 3sgf-call 3sgf-stay+CAUS-CAUS 3sgnf-OBJ

(340) uni yeda di-a-ka-tha-pidena
water downstream 3sgnf-say-FR-REM.P.REP

‘She called him to make him stay, he was trying to go downstream.’

(341) du-wane du-we-ta-pidena
3sgf-call+CAUS 3sgf-stay+CAUS-CAUS-REM.P.REP

(342) ne-pidana diha di-dia-pidena-pita
then-REM.P.REP he 3sgnf-remain-REM.P.REP-again

‘She called him, then he remained again.’

(343) du-na ka-sa-do-pidena
3sgf-OBJ REL-spouse-FEM-REM.P.REP

(344) diha waliru itu-nuku ka-sa-do-pidena diha kali
he evil.spirit daughter REL-spouse-FEM-REM.P.REP he Kali

‘He married her, Kali married the daughter of the Evil spirit.’

(345) di-h~awe-ri ya-dapana diha kali ya-dapana
3sgnf-parent.in.law-MASC POSS-CL:HOUSE he Kali POSS-HOUSE

67 A hill near São Gabriel da Cachoeira popularly known as Bela Adormecida (‘A Sleeping Beauty’); cf. Table 5.
(346) alia-pidana diha-na-pe waha wa-ka-ni-na-pe
EXIST-REM.P.REP he-CL:VERT-PL we 1pl-see-TOP.ADV-CL:VERT-PL

(347) alia-pidena ne-pidena diha kali di-dia-pidena
EXIST-REM.P.REP then he Kali 3sgnf-stay-REM.P.REP

‘The house of his father-in-law, Kali’s house is there, it is on the hills which we see. Then Kali stayed there.’

(348) khida-na na-sape-na pedalia-pe
ready-REM.P.VIS 3pl-tell-REM.P.VIS old-PL

‘This is it. This is what old people tell’

Story 3. The Origin of Tobacco, Snuff and Fire. Author: Cândido Brito

(1) hi$s-nhina pedalia-pe na-pupani na-de-nhina
DEM:AN-REM.P.SEC.H old-PL 3pl-arms 3pl-have-REM.P.SEC.H

(2) khida-nhina na-na hiku-nhi wali-kasu naha hiku-ka
ready-REM.P.SEC.H 3pl-OBJ appear-ANT new-INT they appear-SEQ

‘The old people had arms. This is how it appeared to them, in the beginning, when they came into being.’

(3) hi$s-nuku waha thuya-nhina wa-de-nhi
DEM:AN-TOP.NON.A/S we all.NON.INDIV-REM.P.SEC.H 1pl-have-ANT

(4) yawi-na tuiri-pupani-na yema-pu
jaguar-VERT spear-arms-CL:VERT cigar-CL:HOLLOW

(5) wa-de-nhina waha wa-rada-sina
1pl-have-REM.P.SEC.H we 1pl-poder-REM.P.NON.VIS

(6) waha-sawa-seni wa-rada-sina
we-CL:GROUP-SINGL:PL 1pl-poder-REM.P.NON.VIS

(7) khida-mha wa-kare wa-de-mha waha
ready-PRES.NON.VIS 1pl-heart 1pl-have-PRES.NON.VIS we

‘Then we had everything, (ritual objects), cigar-holder. It was our power, it was the power of our group. All right, we have power in our heart (lit. we have heart).’

(8) hi$s yema sede-sina wali-kasu
DEM:AN tobacco NEG.EX-REM.P.NON.VIS beginning

‘This tobacco did not exist in the beginning’

(9) yema sede-ka di-ka hi$s
tobacco NEG.EX-SEQ 3sgnf-see DEM:AN
(10) kuite\textsuperscript{68} enu-naku Wanali Yapirikuri
which+CL:AN thunder-TOP.NON.A/S Wanali Yapirikuri

(11) di-h\textsuperscript{\textdegree} awe-ri di-de-sina di-de
3sgnf-parent.in.law-MASC 3sgnf-have-REM.P.NON.VIS 3sgnf-have

‘This one what’s-his-name saw that there was no tobacco. Wanali Yapirikuri had thunder as his father-in-law.’

(12) yema sede-ka pana-phe-pidana
 tobacco NEG.EX-SEQ leaf-CL:LEAF.LIKE-REM.P.REP

(13) di-sita di-a-nhi
3sgnf-smoke 3sgnf-go-ANT

‘Having no tobacco, he was smoking leaves.’

(14) pana-phe di-sita-ka du-ka
 leaf-CL:LEAF.LIKE 3sgnf-smoke-SEQ 3sgf-see

(15) di-sa-do du-a-pidana io! nuha nu-sa-niri
3sgnf-spouse-FEM 3sgf-say-REM.P.REP oh! 1sg-husband-MASC

(16) mai-pu-naka pi-rena\textsuperscript{69} phia
bad-AUG-PRES.VIS 2sg-feel you

(17) yema pi-na-ka pi-sita du-a-pidana
 tobacco 2sg-want-SEQ 2sg-smoke 3sgf-say-REM.P.REP

‘His wife saw him smoke leaves and said: ‘My husband, you in a bad way when you want to to smoke tobacco’.’

(18) nuha kwe-hna nuha di-a-pidana
 I INTER-INTER.PRES.VIS I 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

“What’s wrong with me?’ he said.’

(19) phia yapirikuri-ka-naka kay pi-rena-naka du-a-pidana
 you Yapirikuri-DECL-PRES.VIS so 2sg-feel-PRES.VIS 3sgf-say-REM.P.REP

(20) nu-ha-niri puaya-na yema di-de
1sg-parent-MASC elsewhere-REM.P.VIS tobacco 3sgnf-have

(21) di-\textsuperscript{\~n} a-nhi du-a-pidana

\textsuperscript{68} kuite (kwa- ‘which’ + -ite ‘CL:ANIMATE’) is frequently used in the sense of ‘what’s name’.
\textsuperscript{69} Tariana has two verbs which can be translated as ‘feel’: -\textsuperscript{\~n}ena describes physical and mental sensations, while -\textsuperscript{\~n}himeta describes mental processes and presentiments.
“You are Yapirikuri, and you are feeling this way’, she said, ‘my father had tobacco elsewhere’, she said.’

(22) haw diwesewhya pi-a phita di-a-pidana
yes then 2sg-go 2sg-bring 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

(23) diha-ne-nha di-sa-do-nuku
he-AG-PAUS 3sgnf-spouse-FEM-TOP.NON.A/S

(24) phiha (ha)niri dalipa-se pi-a phita di-a-pidana
you father near-LOC 2sg-go 3sg+bring 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

‘Then go and get [it]’, he said to his wife, ‘go to your father and get [it], he said.’

(25) haw du-a-pidana dusu du-a
yes 3sgf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgf+go.up 3sgf-go

‘Yes, she said, and went up.’

(26) yenu-ni-se-pidana diha enu
sky-AFF-LOC-REM.P.REP he thunder

‘The Thunder is in the sky.’

(27) waha diha-tha wa wa-sape-thada
we he-FR 1pl+say 1pl-speak-INDEED

(28) waha wa-yeka-naka diha-naku
we 1pl-know-PRES.VIS he-TOP.NON.A/S

‘We are saying this, we know this.’

(29) dusu du-a du-siri-ne du-a-pidana
3sgf+go.up 3sgf-go 3sgf-husband’s.brother70-INS 3sgf-go-REM.P.REP

(30) du-siri-tiki alia-pidana
3sgf-husband’s.brother-DIM EXIST-REM.P.REP

‘She went with a husband’s brother, there was a small husband’s brother.’

(31) di-na-pidana dhuta dusu du-a
3sgnf-OBJ-REM.P.REP 3sgf+bring 3sgf+go.up 3sgf-go

(32) dusu du-a du-ka-pidana ha-niri dalipa-se
3sgf+go.up 3sgf-go 3sgf-see-REM.P.REP parent-MASC near-LOC

70 See Table 8.
‘She brought him up there, she climbed towards her father.’

(33) kwaka-nikha pi-na-ka pi-nu phia nuitō what-INTER.PAST.VIS 2sg-want-SEQ 2sg-come you daughter:VOC

(34) di-a-pidana pai nuha nu-nu-ka 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP Dad:VOC I 1sg-come-REC.P.VIS

(35) hi.§ pi-imari yema di-na-ka di-sita DEM:AN 2sg-son.in.law tobacco 3sgnf-want-SEQ 3sgnf-smoke

(36) masi-pu-ka di-a-niki bad-AUG-REC.P.VIS 3sgnf-go-COMPL

(37) kayu-maka nu-nu-ka nhuta nuha so-AFF 1sg-come-REC.P.VIS 1sg+bring I

(38) du-a-pidana pi-a-pida di-a-ka 3sgf-say-REM.P.REP 2sg-give-IMPV 3sgnf-say-REC.P.VIS

(39) hi.§ nu-sa-niri du-a-pidana DEM:AN 1sg-spouse-MASC 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

‘Why did you come, daughter (lit. you came wanting what)?’, he said. ‘Dad, I came, your son-in-law is in a very bad way, wanting to smoke tobacco. This is why I came here, she said, give [it to me], he said, my husband’, she said.’

(40) haw di-a-pidana alia-mha di-a-pidana yes 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP EX-PRES.NON.VIS 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

‘Yes, there is [tobacco]’, he said.’

(41) di-mita-ni-kayama-re di-swa-pidana 3sgnf-smoke-TOP.ADV-SMOKING.GRID-POSS 3sgnf-stay-REM.P.REP

(42) diha kuphe kayu di-mita-ni-kayama-re he fish as 3sgnf-smoke-TOP.ADV-SMOKING.GRID-POSS

(43) di-swa-pidana 3sgnf-stay-REM.P.REP

‘There was a smoking grid for fish, something like a smoking grid for fish.’

(44) haw di-a dhita di-musu di-nu yes 3sgnf-say 3sgnf+bring 3sgnf-go.out 3sgnf-come

(45) di-tuka di-whe-ta-hna 3sgnf-break 3sgnf-stay+CAUS-CAUS-PAUS

‘He said, ‘yes’, he brought [it], broke [in two halves] and put it [down] acting as if offering a pepperpot.’

(47) kay di-ni diha-ne di-ka-ka ku:phe-pidana so 3sgnf-do he-INS 3sgnf-see-SEQ fish-REM.P.REP

‘When he did it, for him (her husband’s brother) looking it was fish.’

(48) diha di-h`a-pidana pi-h`a du-a-pidana he 3sgnf-eat-REM.P.REP 2sg-eat 3sgf-A-REM.P.REP

(49) haw di-a-pidana diha-tiki di-h`a-nha yes 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP he-DIM 3sgnf-eat-PAUS

‘He ate. ‘Eat!’ she said, ‘yes’, he said and ate.’

(50) di-h`a thui maïa-naka di-a-pidana 3sgnf+eat all good-PRES.VIS 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

‘The boy ate it all, he (thunder) said, ‘It is good’.’

(51) i-ruku i-a-pita di-a-pidana 2pl-go.down 2pl-go-REP 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

(52) pi-ruku pi-uka hi$ 2sg-go.down 2sg-arrive DEM:AN

(53) panisaru-miki-ri-naku pira pi-khata-nha abandoned.village-NOM.PAST-MASC-TOP.NON.A/S 2sg+order 2sg-vomit-PAUS

(54) di-a-pidana diha enu 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP he thunder

‘Go down again’, he said, ‘you will arrive at an old abandoned village, you order (him) to vomit’, said Thunder.’

(55) diha di-ruku di-nu diha-tiki he 3sgnf-go.down 3sgnf-comehe-DIM

‘The little one came down.’

(56) ai$-ka nuhua-niri direta di-a-pidana here-REC.P.VIS I+parent-MASC 3sgnf+need+CAUS 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

(57) di-uka di-khata 3sgnf-arrive 3sgnf-vomit

‘Here my father ordered you to vomit.’ [she said]

(58) di-khata pa-da yamina-pidana hipole di-nu diha 3sgnf-vomit one-CL:ROUND day-REM.P.REP green 3sgnf-comehe
‘He vomited, one day [later] it [tobacco] came up green.’

(59) yema di-tawina hiku di-nu-pidana  
tobacco 3sgnf-grow appear 3sgnf-come-REM.P.REP

‘The tobacco started growing’

(60) di-khata-mi diha yema di-keta-pidana  
3sgnf-vomit-LOC.NOM he tobacco 3sgnf-meet-REM.P.REP

‘Where he vomited, he (Wanali Yapirikuri) found tobacco.’

(61) ne-pidana hi$ myaka-na-pe nheta diha-naku  
then-REM.P.REP DEM:AN ancient-AFF-PL 3pl+take he-TOP.NON.A/S

(62) hi$ yema-pu-nuku na-sita-pidana  
DEM:AN tobacco-CL:HOLLOW-TOP.NON.A/S 3pl-smoke-REM.P.REP

(63) yema sede-wani-nuku na-keta  
tobacco NEG.EX-CL:NAT.PHEN-TOP.NON.A/S 3pl-meet

(64) na-sita-pidana wa-na ketemi-naka kasina  
3pl-smoke-REM.P.REP 1pl-OBJ rest-PRES.VIS now+ADV

(65) na:-pidana-ta diha-pidana hipatu-nuku di-de  
3pl+say-REM.P.REP he-REM.P.REP snuff-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgnf-have

‘Then the ancient ones took the cigar-holder [and] smoked; while there was no tobacco, 
they found [it] and smoked. Now one thing remains, they said: he [Thunder] has snuff.’

(66) kuphe hipatu-ni na:-nipe hi$  
fish snuff-POSS 3pl+go-ALL.TIME DEM:AN

(67) uni wika-nuku alia-mha  
water over-TOP.NON.A/S EXIST-PRES.NON.VIS

(68) diha-tupe-pidana nah`a na-yã-nhina  
he-DIM:PL-REM.P.REP 3pl+eat 3pl-stay-REM.P.SEC.H

‘There was fish snuff on top of the water, and they were eating small pieces [of it].’

(69) mai-pu-naka i-rena puaya-peri-na  
bad-AUG-PRES.VIS 2pl-feel different-COLL-REM.P.VIS

(70) di-de nuha haniri du-a-pidana duha-ya-pita  
3sgnf-have I father 3sgf-say-REM.P.REP she-EMPH-REP

‘You are having a bad time, my father used to have different [kind of snuff], she said 
once again.’

(71) haw pi-a phita diwesewhya-nuku phia ha-niri-tha-sika  
yes 2sg-go 2sg+bring then-TOP.NON.A/S you parent-MASC-FR-PRES.INFR
“Yes, go and bring [it], in this case your father is said to have it for nothing [and] orders it around’, he said.’

‘Yes, she said, she climbed up to the thunder, [and] arrived.’

‘He [Thunder] did not give the snuff in a way open to all.’

‘There is no him saying: here it is.’

‘Again, he brought smoked fish, broke [it in two] and put it down.’

‘Yes, he (the boy) said, he ate it up (lit. eat-finish); ‘Go down’, said he [Thunder].’

‘He [the boy] came down, he did the same thing as before.’

‘Order him to vomit in the back of the house’, [Thunder] said [to his daughter].’
‘Then he (the boy) arrived and vomited in the very same place, too.’

‘Then it appeared, [it was] [seed of] snuff of tree, snuff of abiu-palm.’

‘He brought two types of snuff trees; there was something still missing.’

‘He did not have fire, there was no fire; he fried fish in the sun and used to eat [it].’

‘She felt [that] there was bad smell of fish, [and] said again: ‘You doing bad to me by eating [this way].’

‘What am I doing to you?’ he said.’
“My father had fire’, she said.’

(97) diwesewhya pia phita di-a-pidana
then 2sg-go 2sg+bring 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

‘Then go and bring [it]’, he said.’

(98) du-a-pidana-pita dusa du-a
3sgnf-go-REM.P.REP 3sgnf+go.up 3sgnf-go

(99) ne-se-pita dusa du-a
then-LOC-REP 3sgnf+go.up 3sgnf-go

‘Then she went up again, up she went again.’

(100) hi$p i-imari syawa-ka di-na diha
DEM:AN 2sg-son.in.law fire-REC.P.VIS 3sgnf-want he

(101) du-a-pidana nu-api mai-pu-ka di-ni
3sgf-say-REM.P.REP 1sg-with bad-AUG-REC.P.VIS 3sgnf-do

(102) di-h~a diha du-a-pidana
3sgnf-eat he 3sgf-say-REM.P.REP

“This son-in-law of yours, it is fire that he wants’, she said, ‘he is doing bad to me by eating [the way he does]’, she said.’

(103) haw nu-it{o nuha mai nu-ni nu-api
yes 1sg-daughter:VOC I bad 1sg-do 1sg-with

(104) nu-h~a-nite-kade-ka phia di-a-pidana
1sg-eat-TOP.ADV+CL:AN-NEG-REC.P.VIS71 you 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

“Yes, my daughter, you have never been the one badly fed with me’, he said.’

(103) mai a nu-ni nu-api nu-h~a-nite-ka
good 1sg-do 1sg-with 1sg-eat-TOP.ADV+CL:AN-REC.P.VIS

(104) phia di-a-pidana nu-a-de pi-na di-a-pidana
you 3sgnd-say-REM.P.REP 1sg-give-FUT 2sg-OBJ 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

“You have been well-fed with me’, he said, ‘I’ll give [it] to you’, he said.’

(105) hiku-pana ma-kade-pidana
appear-ALL NEG+give-NEG-REM.P.REP

---

71 mai nu-ni nu-api nu-h~a-nite is a nominalisation of a serial verb construction marked with the animate classifier -ite (see Aikhenvald forthcoming-d).
He did not give [it] in an apparent way.

(106) diwesewhya pi-ruku pi-a di-a-pidana pi-ruku pi-a
then 2sg-go.down 2sg-go 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 2sg-go.down 2sg-go

(107) marisi-nuku pira pi-a pi-sue-ta
grass-TOP.NON.A/S 2sg+order 2sg-clear 2sg-stay+CAUS-CAUS

(108) marisi pi-a pi-sue-ta pi-wapa-hna di-a-pidana
grass 2sg-clear 2sg-stay+CAUS-CAUS 2sg-wait-IMPV 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

‘Then go down, he said, go down [and] order to clear the grass, arrange the clearing of the grass and wait’, he said.’

(109) hekwa-ka pi-wapa-mhade phia di-a-pidana
midday-SEQ 2sg-wait-PROB.FUT you 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

(110) ne-mhade pi-kisi-pe na:
then-PROB.FUT 2sg-relation-PL 3pl+go

(111) hi$ syawa-nuku na:-mhade na-whanipa
DEM:AN fire-TOP.NON.A/S 3pl+go-PROB.FUT 3pl-deposit

‘Wait until it is midday, then your relatives will go and deposit this fire.’

(112) di-a-pidana diha di-anhti-tha-pidana nu-a-ka
3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP he 3sgnf-be.aware-FR-REM.P.REP 1sg-say-SEQ

(113) di-wapa-nikhe amaku-se di-˚u di-kwa
3sgnf-wait-WHILE:SS hammock-LOC 3sgnf+be.up 3sgnf-hang

(114) di-a-pidana dihmeta di-kwa-pidana
3sgnf-go-REM.P.REP 3sgnf+think 3sgnf-hang-REM.P.REP

‘He said [thus], and he was ‘aware’ (i.e. worried) while he was lying in his hammock, he was up there hanging and thinking (having presentiments).’

(115) ya:piku ka:muy di-eme-ta-pidana
some.time summer.heat 3sgnf+stand+CAUS-CAUS-REM.P.REP

‘He [Thunder] made summer heat for some time.’

(116) peme-kapi-da-pe ka:muy
one+SIDE-hand-CL:ROUND-PL summer.heat

‘He created summer heat for five days.’

(117) di-eme-ta-pidana peme-kapi-da-pidana
3sgnf+stand+CAUS-CAUS-REM.P.REP one+SIDE-hand-CL:ROUND-PL-REM.P.REP
(118) ka:muy a li a maìa-maka rìa dihmita-kasu-pidana
summer.heat EXIST well-dry 3sgnf+burn-INT-REM.P.REP

‘There were five days of summer heat, to burn [the gardens] really dry.’

(119) ya:piku-pidana pi:ma-nha pima na-rìuku na-nu
some.time-REM.P.REP sound-PAUS sound 3pl-come.down 3pl-come

‘For some time there was a sound, they (i.e. relatives) were coming.’

(120) hu:li te:pana alia-pidana
swallow72 swallow73 EX-REM.P.REP

(121) du-weni-ne madalipa-pidana alia
3sgf-younger.brother-INS three+CL:AN-REM.P.REP EXIST

(122) èuite-tiki hu:li alia-pidana
small+CL:AN-DIM andorinha EX-REM.P.REP

‘There were two types of swallows, there were three of them, counting a younger brother, there was a small swallow.’

(123) na-ràuku na-nu-pidana manihta-kade-pidana diha
3pl-come.down 3pl-come-REM.P.REP NEG+realise-NEG-REM.P.REP he

‘They were coming down, he [the boy] did not realise [this].’

(124) di-matàra di-sue-ta di-eku di-a-pidana
3sgnf-leave 3sgnf-stay+CAUS-CAUS 3sgnf-run 3sgnf-go-REM.P.REP

(125) kale-pena-ne hìs kale kale di-eku di-a
wind-FUT.NOM-AG DEM:AN wind 3sgnf-run 3sgnf-go

(126) lama di-eku di-swa-hna di-eku
flame 3sgnf-run 3sgnf-stay-PAUS3sgnf-run

(127) di-a-pidana diha lama-ka-se-pidana
3sgnf-go-REM.P.REP he flame-SEQ-CONTR-REM.P.REP

(128) di-uka di-anihta-hna
3sgnf-arrive 3sgnf-realise-PAUS

‘He [boy] left the fire and ran away. The future wind, the wind appeared all of a sudden (run-go), the flame was everywhere, when there was flame, he [the boy] realised [what was happening].’

(129) pa-ka-karù mahyuna-ma-pidana diha-pada

72 'swifts/cypseloides'
73 'andorinha'; Martins/Progne
It was extremely difficult to see (the original piece of firewood), the flame was moving quickly, the pieces of wood were (running) in flames, [the fire] took all.

He went to look [for the original piece of wood], he did not find it.

A lizard and a small crocodile took little bits of smoke, they were walking while the fire was raging.

They bit and swallowed bits of smoke [and] little pieces of wood (in vain).

The bad crocodile, who was raised (lit. made eat) by them, was there lying down.

He left a lot (of pieces of wood) for the fire to catch on [and so] they did not find [the original piece].

They bit and swallowed bits of smoke [and] little pieces of wood (in vain).
‘He was lying down, he took the hat [made of clay], put it [on his head], ran out, took the very piece of wood [from which the original fire had come].’

‘They (the lizard and the small crocodile) bit and swallowed bits of smoke [and] little pieces of wood (in vain).’

‘He bit [the piece], ran straight up to the water and fell into the water, they tried to look for him in vain.’

‘After that in spite of them lighting [the fire], it went away by going, it was always going away.’

‘Who has it, they asked (in vain).’

They could only show the little bits of smoke.’
‘Whoever took it, they went to look for it.’

‘They were sitting like we are sitting here, only they were all familiar to him (to Wanali Yapi riku r).’

‘It (the fire) is not here’, they said.’

‘They knew who stole it, the crocodile: ‘it is him’ [they said].’

‘In the afternoon there appeared a flame on the water.’

‘He stole, stole and hid the piece, and this is how they knew.’

‘He stole, stole and hid the piece, and this is how they knew.’
(167) na-sape-hna na-siwa-kaka
3pl-speak-PAUS 3pl-self-REC

‘How are we going to get this (from him), they said; they spoke among themselves.’

(168) kwe pheta-ka ru mahyu$na-ma-pidana
INT IMP+take-PURP difficult-EXC-REM.P.REP

‘It was very difficult to get.’

(169) haw diha di-yeka kuite di-yeka-pidana
yes he 3sgnf-know INT+CL:AN 3sgnf-know-REM.P.REP

(170) diha-nha na:pi ka-yâ-ne wanaliana
he-PAUS 3pl+with REL-live-AG Wanali+PEJ

‘Yes, he knew, what’s his name, he knew, the old Wanali (the American snake bird) who stayed with them.’

(171) dapi-nuku dhita di-maiike-ta-pidana
vine-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgnf+take 3sgnf-bad+TH+CAUS-CAUS-REM.P.REP

(172) dapi-puku-pe dhita di-maiiketa-pidana
vine-CL:BUNCH-PL 3sgnf+take 3sgnf-bad+TH+CAUS-CAUS-REM.P.REP

(173) awakada pai$i-pina na-ka$u-nuku
jungle frog-CL:SWAMP 3pl+go-PURP-TOP.NON.A/S

(174) la:pe-se-pidana di-sue-ta
swampy.area-LOC-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-stay+CAUS-CAUS

‘He took bunches of vine and transformed the jungle into a swamp full of frogs, he put them onto a swampy area.’

(175) ne-se-pidana na: nâsa-hna pai$i nâsa-pidana
then-LOC-REM.P.REP3pl+go 3pl+sing-PAUS frog 3pl+sing-REM.P.REP

‘Then the frogs started singing.’

(176) diha-mhade di-a di-h^a di-a-ka-pidana
he-PROB.FUT 3sgnf-go 3sgnf-eat 3sgnf-go-SEQ-REM.P.REP

(177) di-sue-ta
di-matara
3sgnf-stay+CAUS-CAUS 3sgnf-leave

(178) diha-pidana di-a dhita diha
he-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-go 3sgnf+take he

‘He [the crocodile] was going to eat them, after [Wanali] left [them], and so he went.’
(179) kasiri ma:i site di-dukunia-pidana
crocodile bad+CL:AN 3sgnf-lit-REM.P.REP

‘The bad crocodile lit up [with fire].’

(180) di-˘u di-a kerapha-da di-˘u di-a
3sgnf-go.up 3sgnf-go flame-CL:ROUND 3sgnf+go.up 3sgnf-go

‘The flame was going up.’

(181) diwesewhya hiku wa-ni wa-panisa diha-yana-nuku
then thus 1pl-do 1pl-snatch he-PEJ-TOP.NON.A/S

(182) wasã whepa di-a-pidana di-˘u di-a-hna
let’s 1pl-take 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgnf+go.up 3sgnf-go-PAUS

‘Then this is what we are going to do, we will snatch [it] away from the bad one, he (Wanali) said and went up.’

(183) di-ruku di-nu-ka-pidana
3sgnf-descer 3sgnf-come-SEQ-REM.P.REP

(184) di-na nhepa-pidana nhepa di-na
3sgnf-OBJ 3pl+take-REM.P.REP 3pl+take 3sgnf-OBJ

(185) na:ma-pidana hi$ di-daki-nuku
3pl+look for-REM.P.REP DEM:AN 3sgnf-body-TOP.NON.A/S

‘While the crocodile was coming downstream, they took him, they took him and searched his body.’

(186) ne-sede-pidana ma-keta-kade-pidana
then-NEG.EX-REM.P.REP NEG-meet-NEG-REM.P.REP

‘It was not there, they did not find [it].’

(187) di-hwi-da-iki-se-pidana di-de
3sgnf-head-CL:ROUND-brain-LOC-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-have

(188) hi$ wanihta-ni-da-se
DEM:AN 1pl+think, reas on-TOP.ADV-CL:ROUND-LOC

‘He had [the fire] in his brain, the place in which we think of this.’

(189) diki-se di-hwi-da-iki-se-pidana di-de
3sgnf+brain-LOC 3sgnf-head-CL:ROUND-brain-LOC-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-have

(190) syawa-pada-nuku ne-se-pidana kerapha-daka
fire-CL:PIECE-TOP.NON.A/S then-LOC-REM.P.REPflame-YET

(191) di-musu-i-ta diha nama-tha-pidana
‘He still had the piece of fire in his brain, in his head, he was letting it out; they looked in vain, the one who was raised by them (lit. was made eat by them).’

‘There was an oropendola (japú) bird, he knew [where the fire was].’

‘Here it is, he said.’

‘He split his head, split it open, made it open, opened it completely.’

‘Then they took the piece [of wood with fire] out, they took the piece out and they had fire.’

‘They had seen that there was no fire, since there was none, this is what they — reportedly — did to have fire.’
Story 4. The Secret Flute. Author: Cândido Brito

(1) pi-na nu-kalite-de na-pia-nipe-naku
    2sg-OBJ 1sg-tell-FUT 3pl-hide-NOM-TOP.NON.A/S DEM:AN

(2) ina ma-ka-kade-mha
    woman:PL NEG-see-NEG-PRES.NON.VIS DEM:AN

(3) piri-naku kayu-maka pi-na nu-kalite-naka
    Yurupary.flute-TOP.NON.A/S thus-AFF 2sg-OBJ 1sg-tell-PRES.VIS

    ‘I will tell you about their secret thing, [which] women cannot see, about Yurupary flute. This is how I am telling you [this story].’

(4) hiku-sina wa-thanina-se nu-a-ka pi-na
    appear-REM.P.NON.VIS 1pl-beginning-LOC 1sg-say-SEQ 2sg-OBJ

(5) hi$:naku nu-kalite-naka
    DEM:AN-TOP.NON.A/S 1sg-tell-PRES.VIS

    ‘How it was [appeared] from the very beginning [of our tradition], I am saying, I am telling you this.’

(6) ne inaru pa:-ma ma-ka-kade-sina
    then woman one-CL:FEM NEG-see-NEG-REM.P.NON.VIS

(7) ne-pedalia-ma-misini ne-ma-ka-kade-sina
    NEG-old-CL:FEM also NEG-NEG-see-NEG-REM.P.NON.VIS

(8) ne-yanape ne-ma-ka-kade-sina
    NEG-child NEG-NEG-see-NEG-REM.P.NON.VIS

    ‘No woman could see [it], neither an old woman nor a girl could see [it].’

(9) na-ka-sina nha ãia pedalie-pe-mia
    3pl-see-REM.P.NON.VIS they man:PL old-PL-only

(10) kayu ka-ni-kani-mia-sina
    so REL-do-PAST.REL:PL-ONLY-REM.P.NON.VIS

(11) na-ka naha kay na-ni-ka-mha hi$:naku
    3pl-see they so 3pl-do-SEQ-PRES.NON.VIS DEM:AN-TOP.NON.A/S

(12) i:na-nuku mara-kade na-ka-mha
    woman:PL-TOP.NON.A/S NEG+order-NEG 3pl-see-PRES.NON.VIS
‘The ancient men saw [the ones who had done it], this is what they did. They saw: the women had seen this, [they, i.e. men] ordered them not to’

(13) hiku-pidana pi-na kalisi nu-kalite-de
thus-REM.P.REP 2sg-OBJ story 1sg-tell-FUT

‘This is how it was. I will tell you a story.’

(14) diha heku-iha-tiki-nuku dihya yaphini
he afternoon-APPR-DIM-TOP.NON.A/S he thing

(15) piri-naku nhe na-walita-ka-pidana
Yurupary.flute-TOP.NON.A/S 3pl+enter 3pl-offer-SEQ-REM.P.REP

(16) duh a du-dawa-ka du-wa du-a
she 3sgf-hide-SEQ 3sgf-enter.into.bush 3sgf-go

‘This afternoon they [men] entered the village performing the Offering ritual with Yurupary flute. She hid in the bush.’

(17) nuri di-ˆu-nha du-a-pidana du-kapuku du-ka
1sg+son 3sgf-go.up-PAUS 3sgf-say -REM.P.REP 3sgf-turn 3sgf-see

“My son is coming up’, she said, and turned around to see.’

(18) ma-ka-kade-tha du-siwa-se nha-ne du-ka-ka-niki
NEG-see-NEG-FR 3sgf-self-CONTR they-AG 3sgf-see-REC.P.VIS-COMPL

(19) wa-na na:-pidana na-sape
1pl-OBJ 3pl+say-REM.P.REP 3pl-say

(20) piri khe-ne kayu na-sina
Yurupary.flute REL+enter-AG thus 3pl+go-REM.P.NON.VIS
‘She did not see [anything] herself, they [the men] said: ‘She has seen everything about us’, the ones who entered (the village) with Yurupary flute said so.’

(21) kay na-ni nheta thui nha na-pudali-nuku na-sue-ta
thus 3pl-do 3pl+take all they 3pl-offering-TOP.NON.A/S 3pl-stay+CAUS-CAUS

(22) na-sita du-sa-niri-naku na-sape-pidana nha
3pl-finish 3sgf-spouse-MASC-TOP.NON.A/S 3pl-say-REM.P.REP they

(23) pi-sa-do du-ka-ka-niki
2sg-spouse-FEM 3sgf-see-SEQ-COMPL

(24) pi-a pi-wane ikasu-piaka du-na weinu-kasu-niki
2sg-go 2sg-call+CAUS now-this.moment 3sgf OJB 1pl+kill-PURP-COMPL

(25) na-pidana
3pl+say-REM.P.REP
‘Thus they took all their offering and put it (down), [and] told her husband: Since your wife saw everything, go and call her immediately, for us to kill her, they said.’

(26) dhima-pidana harame di-a
3sgnf+hear-REM.P.REP be.scared 3sgnf-go

(27) du-sa-niri dhima harame hanipa-pidana
3sgf-spouse-MASC 3sgnf+hear be.scared big+CL:CL.SP-REM.P.REP

(28) kawarikupeda nu-sa-do-nuku
be.sorry 1sg-spouse-FEM-TOP.NON.A/S

(29) mhe$da nu-ka-ri nu-pe diha ma:i ni nu-siu
PROH 1sg-see-REL 1sg-leave he bad 2pl-do 1sg-for

(30) mhe$da inu nu-ka-ri nu-pe
PROH 2pl+kill 1sg-see-REL 1sg-leave

(31) di-a-pidana di-sape du-sa-niri-nha
3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-tell 3sgf-spouse-MASC-PAUS

‘Her husband heard [this] and was scared, he said, ‘I am very sorry for my wife, don’t do this evil [thing] to me in front of me (lit. me seeing), do not kill [her] in front of me’, said her husband.’

(32) hanipa-pidana di-a-pidana di-kare-se
big+CL:CL.SP-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-heart-LOC

(33) hanipa-pidana kawarikupeda nu-sa-do-nuku
big+CL:CL.SP-REM.P.REP be.sad 1sg-spouse-FEM-TOP.NON.A/S

(34) kwe-mhade na-ni hi$ nu-kesi-pe kay na
INTER-PROB.FUT 3pl-do DEM:AN 1sg-relative-PL thus 3pl+go

(35) na-sape-ka di-a-pidana
3pl-tell-SEQ 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

‘He suffered a lot in his heart. He said ‘I am very sorry for my wife, what are my relatives going to do, talking like this’.’

(36) nu-sa-do-nuku kawhiki-ri pu inu-naka ihy a
1sg-spouse-FEM-TOP.NON.A/S quick-AUG2pl+kill-PRES.VIS you.pl

(37) ihywa-si alia-mha di-ne ihy a ihywa-si-ne
2pl+breath-NPOSS EX-PRES.NON.VIS 3sgnf-INS 2pl 2pl+breath-NPOSS-INS

(38) inu mai-pu-mha inuna-mha
2pl+kill bad-AUG-PRES.NON.VIS be.unwilling-PRES.NON.VIS
“You are killing my wife very quickly [in front of me], [but] there is your [magic] breath; kill [her] with your [magic] breath. It is very bad, I am unwilling to see’, he answered [them].’

‘They finished doing this [sorcery with the magic breath] to her and left [her].’

‘Where they live there is a rapid called ‘the rapid of the ancients’ (i.e. the Apui rapid).’

‘Then piramirim-fish appeared, it is what used to happen during days of the month of yuru-fish.’

Then piramirim-fish got up and came

‘Garden I go, daughter-I come’

‘Garden-I go, daughter-I return, I come’
‘Then she went upstream to get tpiramirim fish and came back. She arranged large bundles of firewood (and) fried [the fish], she fried (and) she put pepper on top of the fire, she finished (preparing) bundles of firewood with piramirim fish. (Then) she went away to the garden with her daughters, and came back from the garden.’

(51) ma na wa-hˆa-kaɾu
let’s 3pl+say 1pl-eat-PURP.RES

‘Let’s eat, they [daughters] said’

(52) ukaɾa pi-wasa du-a-pi-kaɾu
piramirim.fish 2sg-let.jump 3sgf-say-REM.P.REP

‘Let a piramirim fish jump out, she [mother] said.’

(53) na:-pi-kaɾu
3pl+go-REM.P.REP

‘Her daughters went on.’

(54) nu-itu-kaɾu
1sg-daughter-PL

(55) ukaɾa syepu-naka
piramirim.fish-firewood+CL:LOG.LIKE-TOP.NON.A/S

(56) pa-syepu-naka di-swa
one-firewood+ CL:LOG.LIKE-PRES.VIS 3sgf-stay

(57) mhe$da i-hˆa ihya nu-phu-mi-se
PROH 2pl-eat 2pl 1sg-follow-NOM-LOC

(58) taɾa-da-kaɾu-pen-e-naka
ihya du-a-pi-kaɾu
alive-PURP.RES-NOM.FUT-PRES.VIS 2pl 3sgf-say-REM.P.REP

‘She said: ‘My daughters, there is one bundle of firewood with piramirim fish among [other] bundles, do not eat [of it] after me, for you to be alive in future’. ’

(59) du-na hiku-pi-kaɾu-sita du-kaɾe-se
3sgf-OBJ appear-REM.P.REP-PERF 3sgf-heart-LOC

(60) nu-na dihya ki-ya-mhade na-ni du-a-pi-kaɾu
1sg-OBJ he thus-EMPH-PROB.FUT 3pl-do 3sgf-say-REM.P.REP

(61) duhmeta du-si-ta
3sgf+feel,think 3sgf-finish

‘It appeared to her like this in her heart, (and) she said (in her mind), ‘This is what they will do to me’ (i.e. they will poison me).’

(62) kwe-bohtI waha-pu-bohta taɾa-da wa-wa
how-COND we-AUG-COND alive 1pl-try
(63) **na:** wa-h`a-da wha-misini na-pidana nha
   3pl+say 1pl-eat-APPR we-too 3pl+say-REM.P.REP they

(64) du-itu-kanape-nha
   3sgf-daughter-PL-PAUS

   ‘How could we try and stay alive, lest we eat, they said, her daughters.’

(65) ne-nuku duha ne-ma-na-kade-pidana nhaha-do
   then-TOP.NON.A/S she NEG-NEG-want-NEG-REM.P.REP 3pl+parent-FEM

   ‘Then their mother did not want [this to happen].’

(66) mhe§da i-h`a hi§ maleta-peni ku:phe
   PROH 2pl-eat DEM:AN fat+CL:ANIM-PL:ANIM fish

(67) alia-naka nha-ne i-thuka i-h`a hya
   EXIST-PRES.VIS they-AG 2pl-break 2pl-eat 2pl

(68) du-a-pidana dhuepa
   3sgf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgf+answer

   ‘Don’t eat, these fat fish, they are here, break [them] and eat, she answered.’

(69) wha wha-misini wa-yami-de pi:ne-ya
   we we-TOO 1pl-die-FUT 2sg+INS-EMPH

(70) hanipa-bohta kasitana
   big+CL:CLOSED.SPACE-COND be.fed.up

(71) wa-pinita-ka na:-pidana nhepa-pidana
   1pl-follow-SEQ 3pl+say-REM.P.REP answer-REM.P.REP

(72) na-yã-pidena na-na hiku-pana-pidena-sita-nha
   3pl-stay-REM.P.REP 3pl-OBJ appear-ALL-REM.P.REP-PERF-PAUS

(73) du-yami-karu-pena hiku-pana-pidana-sita na-ni
   3sgf-die-PURP.RES-NOM.FUT appear-ALL-REM.P.REP-PERF 3pl-do

   ‘We, we too will die with you, it would be really annoying if we carry on [without you],’ they kept answering. It had already dawned on them that she would be dead, it had dawned on them.’

(74) hi§ i-pu-mina piri dhua§ du-ka-ka

---

75 A few adjectives — such as èui ‘small’ and male ‘big, fat’ — can only take a plural marker after an appropriate classifier; *male-peni would be impossible. This explains the ‘double’ animacy marking here.

76 Personal pronouns have the following variants: nuha, nuhua, hnu ‘I’, piha, pihya ‘you sg.’, dha, dihya ‘he’, duha, duhua, dhua ‘she’, waha, wha ‘we’, ihya, itha ‘you pl.’, and naha, nha ‘they’.
(75) i-pu-mina nu-sa-do-nuku na-inu-na-nha
INDF-follow-NOM+ADV 1sg-spouse-FEM-TOP.NON.A/S 3pl-kill-REM.P.VIS-PAUS

(76) di-a-na di-kalite du-sa-niri-miki-ri
3sgnf-say-REM.P.VIS 3sgnf-tell 3sgf-spouse-MASC-NOM.PAST-MASC

‘Because of this, because of her having seen the Yurupary flute, they killed my wife, her late husband told [this to Cândido].’

(77) heku-hya tuki na hi$ kayi
some.time.ago-APPR DIM 3pl+go DEM:AN thus

(78) ha-kamu-pe-naku nha na-de-naka nha
DEM:INAN-year-PL-TOP.NON.A/S they 3pl-have-PRES.VIS they

(79) mayanakuni diha yaphini piri-naku na-de-naka
Baniwa he thing Yurupary.flute-TOP.NON.A/S 3pl-have-PRES.VIS

‘Some time ago they went like this. These years they, the Baniwa, [still] have this thing, the Yurupary flute.’

(80) hi$ wyume-naka
DEM:AN be.last-PRES.VIS

‘This is it.’

**Story 5. A Menstruating Girl.** Author: Juvino Brito

(1) nu-hˆawe-ri di-kalite nu-na
1sg-parent.in.law-MASC 3sgnf-tell 1sg-OBJ

‘My father-in-law told me [this].’

(2) ne Sao Pedru-nuku nu-hˆawe-ri di-kwa-ri
then São Pedro-TOP.NON.A/S 1sg-parent.in.law-MASC 3sgnf-stay-REL

(3) yeda-naku pa-ita-pidana inaru
downstream-TOP.NON.A/S one-CL:AN-REM.P.REP woman

(4) hi$tu-ka duhua ha-niri
have.first.menstruation-TH she parent-MASC

(5) ^amepa-pidana aîa kenipe duha inaru
two+NUM.CL:HUM-REM.P.REP man:PL REL+child she woman

---

77 Cândido was present at the moment at which the story was told to him long time ago — this accounts for the use of remote past tense visual evidential.
have.first.menstruation-TH+CL:AN be.last+CL:AN-REM.P.REP

‘A woman had her first periods downstream from São Pedro where my father-in-law lives. Her father had two sons (lit. men), the girl who was having her first period was the last one.’

three-CL:DAY day parent-MASC 3sgf+child 3pl-parent-FEM
garden-LOC-REM.P.REP 3pl+go manioc 3pl+get

‘On the third day [of her ritual seclusion] father, sons [and] their mother went to the garden to get manioc.’

they 3pl+go-AFTER:DS-TOP.NON.A/S she woman one-CL:FEM

‘After they went, the girl remained alone in the house.’

NEG-one-CL:AN he-CL:VILLAGE-TOP.NON.A/S person

NEG.EX-REM.P.REP 3pl+work-NOM-LOC 3pl+go-REM.P.REP

‘There was not a single person in the village, all went to their work, they went to work, some went to stay fishing that day.’

she woman 3sgf+think,feel-TOP.NON.A/S how-EMPH thing-PRES.NON.VIS

DEM:AN I+parent-MASC 1sg-OBJ 3sgf+lock.up 3sgf+put-CAUS-CAUS

3sgf-say-REM.P.REP3sgf-say-AFTER:SS

3sgf+open 3sgf-go.out 3sgf-go-REM.P.REP house-NPOSS-TOP.NON.A/REP
‘The girl thought: ‘What indeed is it, [why] my father locked me up with pari sticks [into an eclosure]’, she said. After saying [this], she opened [the house] and went out.’

(19) ne ka-wha-karu yakoleka du-ka du-ema du-ka
then REL-fall-PAST.REL.FEM door 3sgf-see 3sgf-stand 3sgf-see

(20) du-ruku-i-ta-pidana u$i$-se
3sgf-go.down-CAUS-CAUS-REM.P.REP port-LOC

(21) du-ka du-ruku-ita du-siwa du-sape-pidana
3sgf-see 3sgf-self 3sgf-talk-REM.P.REP

(22) nu-na-thama nu-pita nuha du-a-pidana
1sg-want-FR+PRES.NON.VIS 1sg-bathe I 3sgf-say-REM.P.REP

‘Having got out [of the enclosure] she stood looking at the door, she looked down (lit. look-make go down) at the port, she looked down [and] said to herself: ‘I would like to bathe.’

(23) du-kapuku dhue du-a yaru-maka-si dhuta du-musu
3sgf-turn 3sgf+enter 3sgf-go thing-CL:CLOTH-NPOSS 3sgf+take.off 3sgf-go.out

(24) du-nudu-ruku du-a-pidana ui$i$-se du-a du-pita
3sgf-come 3sgf-go.down 3sgf-go-REM.P.REP port-LOC 3sgf-go 3sgf-bathe

‘She turned around and went back (into the house), took off her clothes, came out and went to bathe at the port.’

(25) pa:-piu du-hwa-thepi-kayami pa-whya
one-CL:TIME 3sgf-fall-IN.WATER-AFTER:DS one-CL:CANOE

(26) ita-whya episi-da-ne di-mara di-nu-pidana
canoe-CL:CANOE metal-CL:ROUND-INS 3sgnf-float 3sgnf-come-REM.P.REP

‘After she bathed once, a canoe with a motor came up.’

(27) madalipa-pidana na-yã diha-whya-se
three+NUM.CL:HUM-REM.P.REP 3pl-stay he-CL:CANOE-LOC

(28) ita-whya-se-nuku canoe-CL:CANOE-LOC-TOP.NON.A/S

‘When she looked up (lit. she looked she made go up), there were three white men (i.e. Non-Indians) in this canoe.’

(29) kadite-pidana di-swa-ni-da
One had a really white body, another one was black, he was wearing a black hat, another one was blackish.

The blackish one was steering the canoe, he was really black, his body was white.

Then they came and grabbed her, the girl. When she saw that they grabbed her, she shouted: ‘Don’t take me, because my father is angry’, she said in vain.

She said this, and they grabbed her mouth shut, hung her [over their shoulders] and put her into their canoe.
3sgnf-draw-PUSHING 3pl+go.up-AWAY-REM.P.REP

‘The one who was steering the motoe, pushed the motor and they went upstream.’

(43) ne-dikwe-se-tiki mawali-dapana nha then-3sgnf+upstream-LOC-DIM snake-CL:HAB they


(45) di-hwa nawiki ma:-kade-wani-naka 3sgnf-lie people NEG+go-NEG-CL:NAT.PHEN-PRES.VIS

(46) ka r una-ma-naka ne mawali-dapana-naka be.afraid+ADV-EXC-PRES.VIS then snake-CL:HAB-PRES.VIS

‘Then a little bit upstream there is a Snake-house, a house made by them, there are many stones, and people do not go there. It is dangerous — it is a Snake-house.’

(47) nesa neku na du-na inaru-nuku 3pl+go.up 3pl+run 3pl+go 3sgf-OBJ woman-TOP.NON.A/S


(49) pa-ehkwapi-se-pidana duhua du-ka du-dia-niki one-CL:WORLD,DAY-LOC-REM.P.REP she 3sgf-see 3sgf-remain-COMPL

‘They went up [there], they let the girl’s eye go (i.e. let her open her eyes), she saw herself in another world.’

(50) deikina hekwa di-kapuku di-ema afternoon+ADV midday 3sgnf-turn 3sgnf-stand

(51) ha-niri inipuku ka:-kali di-dia-ka parent-MASC garden REL+go-PAST.REL.MASC 3sgnf-return-SEQ

(52) di-nu-pidana di-ka pamuˆa-sawa-se 3sgnf-come-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-see middle-CL:GROUP-LOC


(54) dhupa-ka-pidana 3sgf-wash-SEQ-REM.P.REP

‘In the afternoon, at midday, her father turned around, having come back from the garden, he saw her wash clothes on a heap of stones.’

78 Cf. discussion in §5.3.1, p. 33.
‘After having said: ‘Who is is washing clothes there in the dangerous corner of the earth?’, he paddled and saw: it was really his daughter, he recognised [her].’

‘The father tried (in vain) to come near her, having addressed his daughter (lit. he said-he put).’

‘She saw the father, and fell into water and dived away going down, she had become a Fish-woman.’

Underlying form is *kuphe-ne-i-sa-do-se-sina* (fish-PL+INDF-spouse-FEM-CONTR-REM.P.NON.VIS).
‘Then the father came floating home, his daughter did not exist, she did not exist [any more], his daughter had married a snake.’

(68) te kasina-misini-nuku  mapisi-ka   diha
until now+ADV-TOO-TOP.NON.A/S  be.ominous-SEQ  he

(69) hipa-da-sawa-se-nuku   yaru-maka-si

(70) dhupa-pidana   diha kay-di-a-mi
3sgf+wash-REM.P.REP  he thus-3sgnf-say-NOM

Until now when it is ominous, she washes clothes on this heap of stones. This is how they tell (it).’

(71) a$i$-mha    kali-si    di-sisa
here-PRES.NON.VIS  tell-NOM  3sgnf-end

‘Here the story ends.’

Story 6. How Children Turned Into Guans. Author: Olívia Brito

Ya:ìiri na-masika-mi
guan  3pl-bad-TH-NOM
Their turning into guans.

(1) a$i$-tuki nu-kalite  kali-si
here-DIM  1sg-tell+DER  tell-NOM

(2) ya:ìiri naha na-masi-ka-mi-pidena
guan they  3pl-bad-TH-REM.P.REP

‘I will tell a little story.’

(3) duha pa-ita-pidena   uphe-do
she one-CL:AN-REM.P.REP  long.ago+parent-FEM

(4) uphe-do-pidena   duha
long.ago+parent-FEM-REM.P.REP  she

‘There was a widow.’

(5) madalipa-pidena   kenipe aìa  ‘hamepa
three+NUM.CL:AN-REM.P.REP  REL+child man:PL  two+NUM.CL:AN

(6) inaru pa-ma-pidena
woman one-CL:FEM-REM.P.REP

‘She had three children, two boys and one girl.’

(7) ke:nipe duha ne-pidan ne:ri-ne
REL+child she then-REM.P.REP deer-INS

(8) ne:ri-ne-pidana du-henita uphe-do-miki-ru
deer-INS-REM.P.REP 3sgf-remarry long.ago-parent+FEM-NOM.PAST-FEM

‘She had children with a deer, this old widow had remarried a deer.’

(9) diha ne:ri ˆaki-pidana ˆaki-pidana diha ne:ri
he deer ghost-REM.P.REP ghost-REM.P.REP he deer

‘This deer was an evil spirit.’

(10) diha depi-mia-pidana di:ma di-yâ-nhi duhua-ne
he night-ONLY-REM.P.REP 3sgnf+sleep 3sgnf-stay-ANT she-INS

‘He slept with her only at night.’

(11) depi-ilha-tiki di-a-khani di-yâ-nhi awakada-se
night-APPR-DIM 3sgnf-go-AWAY 3sgnf-stay-ANT jungle-LOC

‘When it was still dark he used to go to the jungle’

(12) ma:mi dinu-ka di-emhani ne-se di-emhani
tinamou 3sgnf+kill-SEQ 3sgnf-walk then-LOC 3sgnf-walk

‘He was walking around killing tinamou birds.’

(13) dekina kada-wa di-hwa di-swa-pidana
afternoon+AFF black-AFF 3sgnf-fall sgnf-stay

(14) di-dia di-uka di-yâ-nhi
3sgnf-return 3sgnf-arrive 3sgnf-stay-ANT

(15) hanupe-pidana ma:mi dinu di-yâ-nhi
many-REM.P.REP tinamou 3sgnf+kill 3sgnf-stay-ANT

‘In the afternoon when it was getting dark he came back after having killed many

tinamou birds.’

(16) naha-yana-pe-tupe-nuku di-dia-karu i-peya-pidana
they-PEJ-PL-DIM:PL-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgnf-return-PURP INDF-before-REM.P.REP

(17) duha i-ma-kada ihy a amaku-pe-se du-a-pidana
she 2pl-sleep-DIST.IMPV you hammock-Pl-LOC 3sgf-say-REM.P.REP

(18) du-yâ-nhi du-yenipe-nuku
3sgf-stay-ANT 3sgf-child-TOP

81 See Table 10.
‘Before he came home she said to her poor little ones: ‘You sleep over there in your hammocks’, she said to her children.’

(19) kayu na-ni naha-tupe neyJ
so 3pl-do they-DIM:PL 3pl+go.up

(20) na-kwa naha amaku-pe
3pl-hang they hammock-PL

(21) tewida-ku-pe-pidana na-yã-nhi
muriti-CL:HAMMOCK-PL-REM.P.REP3pl-stay-ANT

‘So (lit. after they did so) they climbed into their hammocks made of murit palm leaves.’

(22) ne-se-pidana na-dawa na-ka na-yã-nhi
then-LOC-REM.P.REP3pl-hide 3pl-see 3pl-stay-ANT

‘Then they were looking from their hiding.’

(23) dihya ne:ri i`e di-dia-ka di-uka na-ka
he deer devil 3sgnf-return-SEQ 3sgnf-arrive 3pl-see

(24) duha du-sa-niri di-dia-ka di-uka-pidana
she 3sgf-spouse-MASC 3sgnf-return-SEQ 3sgnf-arrive-REM.P.REP

‘They saw that the deer-devil came back, that her husband came back.’

(25) naha h`a-ka-si du-ni naha mami-pa-nuku
they eat-TH-NOM 3sgf-do they tinamou-AUG-TOP.NON.A/S

(26) h`a-ka-si du-ni-pidana du-h`a thui du-yã-nhi
eat-TH-NOM 3sgf-do-REM.P.REP 3sgf-eat all 3sgf-stay-ANT

‘She made their food, big tinamous, she made the food to eat, and ate everything.’

(27) diha ne:ri di-a-pidana di-yã-nhi
you 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-stay-ANT

(28) pi-enipe-nuku pi-a-nihka pi-h`a
2sg-children-TOP.NON.A/S 2sg-give-INTER.PAST.VIS 2sg-eat

(29) phia di-a-pidana di-yã-nhi
you 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-stay-ANT

‘The deer kept asking: ‘Did you give food to your children’, he was asking.’

(30) nu-a-ka nu-h`a-sita pi-ka-thara
1sg-give-REC.P.Vis 1sg-eat-PERF 2sg-see-PREC

(31) `api-pe-pana-ka di-swa naha amaku yapi-se
bone-PL-ALL-SEQ 3sgnf-stay they hammock under-LOC
‘I gave them to eat, please look (that) all the bones are under their hammocks, this is what they ate, she said.’

‘She was saying it just like that (i.e. there was no truth in her saying it).’

‘The little ones and her went to the garden, she tore out the manioc, and returned home after she treated the manioc.’

‘She drew the juice of manioc, put it for him to drink.’

‘She cooked it, and left it to stay.’

‘It would get cool by itself only, the deer would drink it when he returned at night.’
‘One day she stayed with him for some time.’

(44) ne:ri-tiki-nuku diha ne:ri i^e
dereer-DIM-TOP.NON.A/S he deer devil

(45) aki iri-nuku kenipe du-yâ-nhi
evil.spirit son-TOP.NON.A/S REL+child 3sgf-stay-ANT

‘She had a little deer, the son of this deer-evil spirit.’

(46) naha ha-do du-a-kayami
they parent-FEM 3sgf-go-AFTER:DS

(47) naha-yana-pe diha-tiki-nuku yenu-ni-se-pidana
they-PEJ-PL he-DIM-TOP.NON.A/S up-SUFF-LOC-REM.P.REP

(48) du-tutu du-kwe du-ya-nhi du rii-tiki
3sgf-tie 3sgf-hang+CAUS 3sgf-stay-ANT 3sgf+son-DIM

(49) ne:ri-nuku naha ha-do du-a-kayami
dereer-TOP.NON.A/S they parent-FEM 3sgf-go-AFTER:DS

(50) naha-yanape~ana-pe-hna na-wasa
they-PEJ-PL-PAUS 3pl-jump

(51) na-rukü-i-pidana nheta na-manika na-yâ-nhi
3pl-go down-CAUS-REM.P.REP 3pl-take 3pl-play 3pl-stay-ANT

(52) diha ne:ri-tiki-nuku
he deer-DIM-TOP.NON.A/S

‘After their mother went away, they the bad ones — and she tied him up, her little son the deer — after their mother went away, the bad ones untied him and took him down playing with the little deer.’

(53) diha yako /eka kaliri-peda di-swa-pidana
he door sweet.potato-CL:HEAP 3sgnf-stay-REM.P.REP

‘Near the door there was a heap of sweet potato.’

(54) diha di-phe-nuku diha ne:ri-tiki di-h^a di-yâ-nhi
he 3sgnf-leaf-TOP.NON.A/S he deer-DIM 3sgnf-eat 3sgnf-stay-ANT

‘The little deer was eating the leaves.’

(55) ne-se na-mata râ neme-ta-pidana diha-tiki
then-LOC 3pl-leave 3pl-stand+CAUS-CAUS-REM.P.REP he-DIM

(56) na-wapa na-yâ-nhi diha kaliri i-phe di-h^a-ka
3pl-wait 3pl-stay-ANT he sweet.potato INDF-leaf 3sgnf-eat-SEQ
‘Then they left him stand, they were watching him eat the leaves of sweet potato.’

(57) kayu na-ni pa-da dihya ne:ri-tiki
so 3pl-do one-CL:ROUND he deer-DIM

(58) di-dawa-niki di-eku-hu
3sgnf-hide-COMPL 3sgnf-run-AWAY

(59) di-wa di-a-pidana awakada-se
3sgnf-enter 3sgnf-go-REM.P.REP jungle-LOC

‘After they did so, one day the little deer rushed off quickly into the jungle.’

(60) kayu na-ni-ri-pidena du-dia duka
so 3pl-do-CONV-REM.P.REP 3sgf-return 3sgf+arrive

(61) nha ha-do du-a-pidana na-na
they parent-FEM 3sgf-say-REM.P.REP 3pl-OBJ

(62) kweka-nihka nur-nuku i-matara ihya
why-INTER.PAST.VIS 1sg+son-TOP.NON.A/S 2pl-leave you

(63) ma:i-peni yanape du-a-pidena du-kwisa
bad-PL AN children 3sgf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgf-scold

‘After they did this, their mother came. She said to them: ‘Why did you leave my son, you bad children?’, she scolded them.’

(64) na-na du-kwisa-ka nhema na-rukukha
3pl-OBJ 3sgf-scold-SEQ 3pl+hear 3pl-go.down-AWAY

(65) na: na-yã-nhi na: na-pita ui$:se na-pita
3pl+go 3pl-stay-ANT 3pl+go 3pl-bathe port-LOC 3pl-bathe

‘Hearing her scold, they went away, they went down to the port to bathe at the port.’

(66) i-yu$:ka i-nu kwaka i-ni-mhade ihya
2pl-go.up-SEQ 2pl-come how 2pl-do-PROB.FUT you

(67) i-phya-mhade ihya du-a-pidana du-yã-nhi
2pl-breathe-PROB.FUT you 3sgf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgf-stay-ANT

‘When you go up, give me a hint (lit. breathe) about what you are going to do, she said.’

(68) neyu-kasu na-nu na-phya-pidana na-yã-nhi
3pl+go.up-INT 3pl-come 3pl-breathe-REM.P.REP 3pl-stay-ANT

(69) kayu payape-se-nuku pure-pure
so long.ago-LOC-TOP.NON.A/S pure-pure
‘They were going to go up, and they were breathing, like in the old days, pure-pure, with their hands.’

‘While they did so and were going up, she was going to eat, she was going to eat alone.’

‘She ordered them to bathe.’

‘When she heard them do it while she was eating, she put away all her food.’

‘She doing so, one day they said, ‘Let’s kill this bad one (deer)’, they thought, the children.’

‘So they did, they went and got fish-poison.’
'They smashed and squeezed the fish-poison, and mixed its juice into the manioc drink.'

'so he did, the deer, he returned to have a drink.'

'He felt a strong smell. 'It is apparently not ready,' he said.'

'After he said so, ‘I made [the drink] as I really always do’, answered his wife.'

'After he said so, the deer drank and died, the evil spirit.'

'After he said so, the deer drank and died, the evil spirit.'
(96) du-a-pidena du-kwisa  
3sgf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgf-scold

‘After he died, she scolded her children, ‘You bad ones, you did like this’, she scolded them.’

(97) kayu na-ni nha kawari kupeda nemhani-pidena-hna  
so 3pl-do they be.sad 3pl+walk-REM.P.REP-PAUS

‘After they did so, they were going around sad.’

(98) hipe-thiwa-se-pidana na: maka-yawa-pe nheka  
ground-CL:DITCH-LOC-REM.P.REP 3pl+go large-CL:HOLE-PL 3pl+dig

(99) na-kasu-hna nheka nheka nemhani  
3pl+go-INT-PAUS 3pl+dig 3pl+dig 3pl+walk

(100) depiha-tiki na: te dekina  
night+APR-DIM 3pl+go until afternoon+ADV

(101) na-dia na-yâ-nhi  
3pl-return 3pl-stay-ANT

‘They went to a ditch (slope), they were digging a hole for them to go, digging, digging, they went out in the morning early and came back in the afternoon.’

(102) nha-tupe nha na-kesi-du-tiki-se pa-yawa  
they-DIM:PL they 3pl-relative-FEM-DIM-CONTR one-CL:HOLE

(103) nha-misini nha hindapada-yawa-pe-pidana nheka-nha  
they-ALL TOO they each-CL:HOLE-PL-REM.P.REP 3pl+dig-PAUS

‘They the little ones, with their little sister, were digging a hole each.’

(104) kay na-ni dekina na-dia-ka na-ka  
so 3pl-do afternoon+ADV 3pl-return-SEQ 3pl-arrive

(105) nu-yenipe kani-se-nihka i-uka ihia  
1sg-children where-LOC-INTER.PAST.VIS 2pl-arrive you

(106) du-a-pidana du-yâ-nhi naha ha-do  
3sgf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgf-stay-ANT they parent-FEM

‘After they did so, when they returned home in the afternoon, their mother said, ‘My children, where are you coming from?’

(107) kayu du-a-ka waha waka-ka ya:ka whepa  
so 3sgf-say-SEQ we 1pl+arrive-SEQ shrimp 1pl+catch

(108) wama-nikha na-pidana na-yâ-nhi  
1pl+look.for-REC.P.INFR 3pl-say-REM.P.REP 3pl-stay-ANT
‘After she said so, ‘We have arrived, we were playing as if catching shrimp, they said.’

(109) kay du-a du-itu-nuku ketemi-ma-tiki-nuku
so 3sgf-say 3sgf-daughter-TOP.NON.A/S rest-EXC-DIM-TOP.NON.A/S

(110) du-kapi dhuta du-ka du-yã-nhi-pidena
3sgf-hand 3sgf+take 3sgf-see 3sgf-stay-ANT-REM.P.REP

‘So she said, she took her daughter, the very last little one, by her hand to see.’

(111) ne-se-pidena hipe ðeru di-yã-nhi
then-LOC-REM.P.REP mud hang 3sgf-stay-ANT

(112) duha du-kapi-pe-se
she 3sgf-hand-PL-LOC

‘Then there was mud ‘hanging’ on her hands.’

(113) kwe pi-ni-nihka phia du-a-pidana du-sata dhuma
what 2sg-do-INTER.PAST.VIS you 3sgf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgf-greet 3sgf+hear

‘What have you been doing, she asked (lit. greet hear).’

(114) kayu-ka nu-phe-ne-ne nha ya:ka nhepa-ka
so-SEQ 1sg-elder.brother-PL-INS they shrimp 3pl+take-SEQ

(115) nu-ita-ka nu-manika-ka
1sg-close-SEQ 1sg-play-REC.P.VIS

(116) du-a-pidena du-yã-nhi duha-tiki
3sgf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgf-stay-ANT she-DIM

‘While my elder brothers were catching shrimp, I was playing at ‘closing’ (a spring’), said the little one.’

(117) kay-na-ni nha diha-yawa-pe-se pa-da-pidana
so-3pl-do they he-CL:HOLE-PL-LOC one-CL:ROUND-REM.P.REP

(118) hyukade
not.appear

‘So they did, and [one day] they ‘disappeared’ in the holes.’

(119) kayu na-ni-ka kwe-nihka iha
so 3pl-do-SEQ how-INTER.PAST.VIS you.pl

(120) du-a-pidana du-yã-nhi naha ha-do-ne
3sgf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgf-stay-ANT they parent-FEM-AG

---

82 Recent past inferred is used to express the meaning of ‘as if’.
'After they did so, ‘What are you doing’, said their mother.’

(121) kayu na-ni pa-da dekina-pidana na:-nha
so 3pl-do one-CL:ROUND afternoon+ADV-REM.P.REP 3pl+talk-PAUS

‘So they did, they talked (to each other) one day in the afternoon.’

(122) na-nu nara na-swa-pidana hawaya-na wika-se-hna
3pl-come 3pl+fly 3pl-stay-REM.P.REP ingá-CL:VERT top-PL-PAUS

‘They arrived flying onto an ingá-tree.’

(123) ya:iiri na-maiika-pidena-sita-hna
3pl-transform-REM.P.REP-PERF-PAUS

‘They have already turned into guans.’

(124) kayu na-ni naha ha-do du-a-pidena i-ruku
so 3pl-do they parent-FEM 3sgf-say-REM.P.REP 2pl-go.down

(125) i-nu nu-inipe-ka ihia du-a-tha-pidena
2pl-come 1sg-children-SEQ you 3sgf-say-FR-REM.P.REP

‘So they did, their mother said, ‘Come down, you are my children’, she said in vain.’

(126) mhema-kade-pidena na-dia-tha-pidena
NEG+hear-NEG-REM.P.REP 3pl-return-FR-REM.P.REP

(127) pa-da pa-da-pidena na:-khani
one-CL:ROUND one-CL:ROUND-REM.P.REP 3pl+go-AWAY

‘They did not listen, one day they came back in vain, another day they went away.’

(128) nha na:
they 3pl+go

(129) te hawaya-na wika-se na-nu na-hwa na-hwa-pidena
until ingá-CL:VERT top-LOC 3pl-come 3pl-sit 3pl-sit-REM.P.REP

‘They came and sat on the ingá tree.’

(130) i`okoro tutíri na:ka-peru du-kwisa-ka
(Our mother scolded us) Mum:REF-OLD:FEM 3sgf-scold-REC.P.VIS

(131) na:-pidana ăi-a-tupe
3pl+say-REM.P.REP man:PL-DIM:PL

‘Our old mother scolded us, said the little men.’

83 Underlined text is in Piratapuya. Animals in stories usually speak a different language.
‘They repeated how she had scolded them, so they spoke.’

‘In spite of her crying, the daughter was saying, ‘She scolded me’; the woman was crying while she (the daughter) was muttering (it).’

‘So they did, they flew away.’

‘Her poor old shadow there, what’s name, in swamps, a bird, goes niri-niri-niri, her poor old shadow.’

‘This is the end of the story.’

Story 7. Evil Spirits. Author: Graciliano Brito

^aki-ne
evil.spirit-PL
Evil spirits

(1) payape:-se-pidana pa-ita ììàù di-sa-do-nuku
A long time ago a man said to his wife, ‘I am now going to drink caxiri (manioc beer).’

He was going to drink caxiri upstream from where he lived, so he went onto a road to that village.

So he said to his wife, ‘When I am back in the middle of the night I shall call out’; as I am saying, as you hear [me come], light the turí, and go and meet me’, he said.’
(13) du-sa-ni-ri-ne
3sgf-spouse-MASC-INS

'The woman was obedient to the husband (lit. she had a good heart with respect to her husband).'

(14) kayu di-a ka-kalite di-a-khani-pidana halite-tiki
so 3sgnf-say REL-tell 3sgnf-go-AWAY-REM.P.REP early-DIM

(15) te ne-se di-uka dira-pidana payaru-nuku
until then-LOC 3sgnf-arrive 3sgnf+drink-REM.P.REP caxiri-TOP.NON.A/S

(16) dira dainu-pidana
3sgnf+drink sleep-REM.P.REP

(17) dira halia-pidana diha ma-nu-kade-pidana
3sgnf+drink early-REM.P.REP he NEG-come-NEG-REM.P.REP

'So he went as he said early. He came (to the village) and drank caxiri, he drank and he fell asleep, drank and he did not come [home] early.'

(18) di-sa-do-nuku di-kalite-mi ma-ni-kade-pidana
3sgnf-spouse-FEM-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgnf-tell-NOM NEG-do-NEG-REM.P.REP

'He did not do what he had said to his wife.'

(19) duhua di-sa-do dhumeta du-kwa-pidana dhumeta
she 3sgnf-spouse 3sgf+think 3sgf-hang-REM.P.REP 3sgf+think

(20) du-kwa-ka phema-ri pa-~are-ta
3sgf-hang-SEQ IMP+hear-CONV IMP-disappear+CAUS-CAUS

(21) di-wana-nhi-pidana di-wana di-nu-pidana
3sgnf-call-ANT-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-call 3sgnf-come-REM.P.REP

(22) III! di-a-pidana III! di-a-pidana
III! 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP III! 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

'The wife was hanging (in her hammock) thinking; while she was hanging and thinking, there was a voice a long way away calling and coming towards her: ‘III!’'

(23) mesape phita pi-nuuu! di-a-pidana kada-wa-ma-nha
turi 2sg+take 2sg-come 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP dark-AFF-EXC-PAUS

(24) di-a-pidana
3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

"Bring turi!", he said. ‘It is too dark’, he said.

(25) i.a! nu-sa-ni-ri di-dia-ka di-nu-mha
i.a! 1sg-spouse-MASC 3sgnf-return-DECL 3sgnf-come-PRES.NON.VIS

(26) du-a-pidana diha kayu-ka di-a di-kalite du-a-pidana
“‘ia! My husband is coming back’, she said. She did as he told her (to).’

(27) mesape dhuta du-enipe-nuku du-kahweta
    turi 3sgf+take 3sgf-child-NON.A/S 3sgf-be.awake+CAUS

(28) ihya ha-niri di-dia-mha di-nu
    you.pl parent-MASC 3sgnfr-return-PRES.NON.VIS 3sgnfr-come

(29) du-a-pidana haw na:-pidana mesape nheta
    3sgf-say-REM.P.REP yes 3pl+say-REM.P.REP turi 3pl+take

(30) na-dukunia na:-pidana hinipu-se
    3pl-light 3pl+go-REM.P.REP road-LOC

‘She took turi and woke up the children, ‘Your father is coming back’. ‘Yes’, they said, they took the turi, they lit it up on the road.’

(31) mhaï$sda piaka naha diha-puna-se na:ka
    a.little now they he-CL:STRETCH-LOC 3pl+go-SEQ

(32) di-wana-pidana III! di-a-pidana-pita
    3sgnfr-call-REM.P.REP III! 3sgnfr-say-REM.P.REP

(33) upi-mia-pidana di-a-pita III! 3sgnfr-say-REM.P.REP
    long.ago-ONLY-REM.P.REP 3sgnfr-say-REP III! 3sgnfr-say-REM.P.REP

‘A little later they went to that road, it called again: ‘III!’, it said again, as before, it said again: ‘III!’, it said.’

(34) di-dalipa-ixa-tiki di-wana di-nu-pidana
    3sgnfr-near-APPR-DIM 3sgnfr-call 3sgnfr-come-REM.P.REP

‘It came and called again nearer.’

(35) kay na-ni dinipe pa:ïi mesape pa-ita
    so 3pl-do 3sgf+child another turi one-CL:AN

(36) dhepanita di-dukunia-pidana di-dalipa-tiki
    3sg+change 3sgnfr-light-REM.P.REP 3sgnfr-near-DIM

(37) di-wana di-nu-pidana
    3sgnfr-call 3sgnfr-come-REM.P.REP

‘Children changed one turi to another, lit (it) very near to him; he was calling.’

(38) iha ha-niri di-nu-sita du-a-pidana
    you:pl parent-MASC 3sgnfr-come-PERF 3sgf-say-REM.P.REP

‘Your father is already coming’, she said.’
They were lighting and lighting turí for some time; someone looking like a big man came near them, it was an evil spirit, it was not their father.

He found their mother and took her, and danced with her on the road.

‘Her children lit (the turí) and were standing waiting, while the evil spirit was dancing.’

‘Then it dawned and became light.’

See Table 7, for the structure of a day in Tariana.
'The ghost crushed their mother’s head, sucked the top of the head and threw (her) away. He left only her skin hanging on a vine.'

(52) di-wa-kha di-a-pidana
3sgnf-enter-AWAY 3sgnf-go-REM.P.REP

(53) du-yenipe na:ka na-pinita-ka na-wa na-pidana
3sgf-child 3pl+arrive 3pl-follow-SEQ 3pl-enter 3pl+go-REM.P.REP

‘He went away (into the jungle), her children went after him (into the jungle).’

(54) tuki di-wa di-a heku-na hanu-na
a.little 3sgnf-enter 3sgnf-go tree-CL:VERT big-VERT

(55) hala-na-se dhe-kha di-a-pidana diha
open-CL:VERT-LOC 3sgnf+enter-AWAY 3sgnf-go-REM.P.REP he

(56) ^aki pani-si-ka-pidana ha-na heku-na

‘He went on a little, and then entered a hollow tree, since this tree was the evil spirit’s house.’

(57) nha-niri diha-kada-ya hekwa-se-pidana di-dia
3pl+ parent-MASC he-CL:DAY-EMPH middle-LOC-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-return

‘At midday their father came back.’

(58) dinipe di-na na-kolota na-kalite-pidana
3sgnf+child 3sgnf-OBJ 3pl-meet 3pl-tell-REM.P.REP

(59) phia ma:iite wa-na pi-maye-nihka
you bad+CL:AN 1pl-OBJ 2sg-cheat+CAUS-REC.P.INFR

(60) pi:s:kase wa-ha-do-nuku ^aki
earlier.on.today 1pl-parent-FEM-TOP.NON.A/S evil.spirit

‘His children met him and said to him, ‘You the bad one cheated us, earlier on today a evil spirit ate up our mother.’

(62) kani-nihka diha di-a di-sata dhima-pidana
where-INTER.PAST.VIS he 3sgnf-go 3sgnf-ask 3sgnf+hear-REM.P.REP

‘Where did he go’, he asked.’

(63) naha-tupe dinipe na-kalite-pidana wa-ka-ka waha
they-DIM:PL 3sgnf+child 3pl-tell-REM.P.REP 1pl-see- REC.P.VIS we
The little ones said, ‘We have seen where he went in’.

They told them, ‘We have heard and we have gone and have seen the tree which he (the evil spirit) had entered.

He returned and took pepper, their father took pepper to kill the evil spirit, he took pepper and took turí.

‘Let’s go and kill the bad one’, he said.’

‘They went unto the jungle, until they arrived, they lit fire and made smoke with pepper, they made a big fire.’

‘He returned and took pepper, their father took pepper to kill the evil spirit, he took pepper and took turí.’
a little now they evil.spirit-PL many-REM.P.REP 3pl-stay he-
CL:VERT

(77) heku-na-se diha ^aki pani-si-ka-pidana
tree-CL:VERT-LOC he evil.spirit house-NPOSS-SEQ-REM.P.REP

‘In a little while there were many evil spirits, since this tree was the house of evil
spirits.’

(78) diha syawa su$me la:ma-ka i:sa dhe-ka di-a
he fire much burn-SEQ smoke 3sgnf+enter-SEQ 3sgnf-go

(79) diha-na heku-na-se naha ^aki-ne na-khetya-pidana
he-CL:VERT tree-CL:VERT-LOC they evil.spirit-PL 3pl-cough-REM.P.REP

(80) na-yami-kasu na-musu na-nu-pidana
3pl-die-INT 3pl-go.out 3pl-come-REM.P.REP

‘While the fire was aflame and the smoke was entering (into the tree), the evil spirits
were coughing, they were going out to die.’

(81) diha du-sa-niri-miki-ri heku-pada di-de
he 3sgnf-spouse-MASC-NOM.PAST-MASC tree-CL:PIECE 3sgnf-have

(82) diha-na heku-na i-hwi-da-na

(83) ma^a-pidana di-wapa di-ema ka-musu
middle-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-wait 3sgnf-standREL-go.out

(84) ka-nu-nuku di-^a-kasu-wisa-pidana
REL-come-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgnf-hit-INT-SMASH-REM.P.REP

‘The poor husband had a piece of wood. He was standing at the entrance of this tree
waiting for them to go out for him to smash them.’

(85) êu-ita-pe-tupe-pidana na-musu na-ke^a
small-CL:AN-PL-DIM:PL-REM.P.REP 3pl-go.out 3pl-start

(86) nha-tupe-nuku di-^a-nipe-wisa-pidana
they-DIM:PL-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgnf-hit-ALL.TIME-SMASH-REM.P.REP

(87) pa! di-hwi-da ma^a dhema-thani
pa! 3sgnf-head-CL:ROUND middle 3sgnf+cry-EVERYWHERE

(88) di-a-nipe-pidana diha di-^a-nipe-wisa
3sgnf-say-ALL.TIME-REM.P.REP he 3sgnf-hit-ALL.TIME-SMASH

‘The little ones started coming out, he was hitting him in the middle of the head, pa!
was their shouting when he was smashing (them).’

(89) yuwapiku nha na-sisa-ri pedalia-pe na-musu na-nu-pidana
‘Some time after they having finished, the old ones started coming out, he smashed them, too.’

‘After them, after the old ones finished, their boss, the one who had eaten their mother, came out, he was a big evil spirit.’

‘He hit him with a piece of wood in the middle of the forehead, smashed him (making him fall down).’

‘He killed all of them.’

‘After they did so, they split the tree where the evil spirits lived, killed them all.’
Inside there was plenty of edible (leaf-cutting) ants, the queen of da:ne, the queen of pi:si, the evil spirits had their food inside the palm tree trunk.

‘After they did so, they came back to their house, the husband returned, he cried, he was a Tucano.’

‘My wife, how will I be (without you),’ he said and cried (all) in Tucano.’

‘It is over.’

Story 8. A Man and a Snake. Author: Juvino Brito

A man and a snake

‘Once a man not loved by women lived with his mother.’
One day his mother said to him, 'You go and look for women, too', she said to him.

After she said so, he answered his mother, 'Bring me my 'sister-in-law' for me to marry her', the son answered his mother.

Yes', she said, 'I'll go', she answered.

One day she went and brought the women.
(16) dyuka-pidana ku:phe kaka-kali khalitu
3sgnf+arruve fish REL+arrive-PAST.REL REL+fish

'The young man went fishing. After he went, she arrived with the woman. In the afternoon the son came back from fishing.'

(17) nuhua pi-siu pi-teduaru-nuku
I 2sg-for 2sg-sister.in.law-TOP.NON.A/S

(18) nuka-ka nhuta nhua pi-siwa pi-yeka
1sg+arrive-REC.P.VIS 1sg+take I 2sg-self 2sg-know

(19) du-a-pidena du-kalite därî-nuku
3sgf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgf-tell 3sgf+son-TOP.NON.A/S

"I have brought your sister-in-law for you, (now) it is up to you (lit. you know for yourself)", she said to her son.'

(20) duhua ìnàru-ne nhesirì-kade-pidana diha iìàri-nuku
she woman-AGlike-NEG-REM.P.REP he man-TOP.NON.A/S

(21) ka:-pidana du-ka-niki
so-REM.P.REP 3sgf-look-COMPL

'The woman did not like the man, was indifferent to him (lit. looked at him like that).'

(22) diha waliki-rì ke:ru-pidana di-yena
he young.person-MASC angry-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-exceed

(23) ka:-de nu-a nupa-niki di-a-pidana dhimeta
so-FUT 1sg-go 1sg-rot-COMPL 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgnf+think

'The young man got very angry, ‘I will rot (die) for nothing’, he thought.’

(24) na-ya-yakale ye:da pa-nai
3pl-POSS-CL:VILLAGE INDF+downstream one-CL:LAKE

(25) alia-pidana mawali kërù-nai ne-nuku
EXIST-REM.P.REP snake angry-CL:LAKE then-TOP.NON.A/S

(26) ne-pa-ita pa-wa-ri sede-pidana
NEG-one-CL:AN IMP-enter-CONV NEG.EX-REM.P.REP

(27) di-yà-nhi
3sgnf-stay-ANT

‘In their village, downsteam, there was a lake of an angry snake, nobody entered there.’

(28) halite diha waliki-rì di-kalite-pidana ha-do-nuku
early he young.person-MASC 3sgnf-tell-REM.P.REP parent-FEM-TOP.NON.A/S
Early in the morning the young man said to his mother, ‘My sister-in-law really dislikes me, so I will die (rot),’ he said, he was annoyed.’

‘After he said so, he took a paddle and went down to the port.’

‘He took water out of the canoe and floated, pushed canoe out of the water, fell into the water and swam, having said, ‘Let the snake eat me’.’

‘There was a point in the corner of the lake, one closed part to the right, and one to the left, so he entered one.’
‘From the right hand side there came a young man paddling, he was the son of a snake.’

‘He saw him and asked him: ‘Cousin, what are you doing here, floating, what are you doing’, he said.’

‘The man not loved by women answered him, ‘I am floating in this lake so that the snake may eat me’, he answered the snake man.’

‘The snake you are talking about does not exist here’, he answered, himself being a snake.’

86 nai is a vocative form for masc. nu-tedua \i, fem. nu-tedua-\u ‘mother’s brother’s son/daughter’ — see Table 8.
‘So he said, answering, ‘You come with me, now that you are feeling badly in this world, I shall take you (away), said the snake man.’

‘Come, I will grab and throw dust into your eyes’, he said.’

‘So he did, he grabbed his eyes tightly, and he (the man) arrived into a ‘different world’, in a village he arrived.’

‘Stay here and wait, cousin’, he said to the man, ‘I will tell my father, he is very angry’.

‘He did not say (it was a snake) and went up.’
(67) tuki hyukade di-ruku di-uka-pidana-ta
  little not.appear 3sgnf-go down 3sgnf-arrive-REM.P.REP-REP

(68) mai'a-ka di-a-pidana
  good-SEQ 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

  ‘For a little while he did not appear, then he came down, he said, “It’s good”.’

(69) diha nawiki-nuku mhâida karu-mhade phia nhuua
  he man-TOP.NON.A/S PROH be.scared-PROB.FUT you I

(70) ha-niri karu-mana di-yâ-ka diha ka phime
  parent-MASC be.scared-EXC+ADV 3sgnf-stay-SEQ he thus 2sg+hear+CAUS

(71) pi-hwa-niki pa-phina-pe wika-se-nha di-peta
  2sg-sit-COMPL IMP-thigh-PL top-LOC-PAUS 3sgnf-hit.with.tail

(72) di-yena di-a di-yâ-ka
  3sgnf-exceed 3sgnf-go 3sgnf-stay-SEQ

(73) mhâida pi-ˆupiru-mhade phia
  PROH 2sg-move-PROB.FUT you

  ‘He said to the man, ‘Don’t be afraid; when my father is dangerous, you sit quietly, when he goes round and round on (people’s) things hitting (them) with his tail, don’t move’.’

(74) di-sata-ka kay di-ni di-ˆa-ka-nha di-a
  3sgnf-greet-SEQ so 3sgnf-do 3sgnf-stay-REC.P.VIS-PAUS 3sgnf-say

(75) di-kalite-pidana haw di-a-pidana diha-misini
  3sgnf-tell-REM.P.REP yes 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP he-TOO

  ‘When he greets, this is what he does’, he (the snake man) said. ‘Yes’, said the other one, too.’

(76) ¨amepa neyu$ kha na-pidana
  two+NUM.CL:HUM 3pl+go.upstream away 3pl+go-REM.P.REP

(77) te pani-si-se yakoleka di-uka di-ema
  until house-NPOSS-LOC door 3sgnf-arrive 3sgnf-stand

(78) di-a-pidana di-na nawiki-nuku
  3sgnf-go-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-OBJ man-TOP.NON.A/S

(79) ai$ pi-wha nhuua ha-niri di-musu-mhade
  here 2sg-sit I parent-MASC 3sgnf-go.out-PROB.FUT

(80) di-nu pi-na di-sata-kasu ka phime
‘The two went upstream up to the house. He arrived at the door and said to the man, ‘Sit here, my father will come out to greet (you), sit quietly’, he said.’

‘He entered, after he (the man) entered, a big snake came out hitting his tail to greet him, and the man saw him and sat down.’

‘He beat his tail over the man’s thighs, he licked his body, he was sliding (as a snake does) and went away.’

‘After he entered, his wife came out hitting her tail.’

‘She beat her tail over the man’s thighs, sliding over him.’
After she entered, two (more) went out, they were young ones, his daughters.

‘One hit her tail a lot, the last one arrived hitting her tail, (and) the man moved.’

When she saw that he moved, she came back, she stayed on his thigh for some time, she thought he liked her.

After she did so, they all greeted him he, called cousin, also came out, after the father-in-law.

Tariana has two verbs of liking: 
\textit{hui} ‘like food’, and 
\textit{nhes i\textbackslash i} ‘like anything except food’.
The snake took off the snake attire and greeted him.

The man, the woman and the daughters came out to greet him.

The last one was beautiful, her face was painted.

The last one squeezed the hand of the (man) who was thinking and let it go.

The snake’s wife put a pepper-pot and took it to him (the man).’

The snake’s wife put a pepper-pot and took it to him (the man).’

The snake’s wife put a pepper-pot and took it to him (the man).’

The snake’s wife put a pepper-pot and took it to him (the man).’

The snake’s wife put a pepper-pot and took it to him (the man).’
(122) du-hweta-pidana     di-na     du-ra-ka     du-h^a
3sgf-stay+CAUS-CAUS-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-OBJ 3sgf+order-SEQ 3sgf-eat

'She put in front of him meat of game, thigh of a wild pig, thigh of a paca, thigh of an agouti, thigh of deer, and ordered him to eat.'

(123) diha nawi ki tuki-tiki-pidana     di-^ha     nha     na-ka-ka-nuku
he man              little-little-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-eat they 3pl-see-SEQ-TOP.NON.A/S

(124) di-duhwe-zi-nuku     di-a-pidana
3sgfnf-parent.in.law-MASC-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgfnf-say-REM.P.REP

(125) pi-h^a-si     phia-misini     nu-ine     di-a-pidana
2sg-eat-IMM.IMPV you-TOO 1sg-INS 3sgfnf-go-REM.P.REP

(126) haw     nu-h^a-de     di-a-pidana     pa-iphina     dhita
yes 1sg-eat-FUT 3sgfnf-go-REM.P.REP one-CL:THIGH 3sgfnf+take

(127) di-pe     di-h^a-khani-pidana     di-h^a
3sgfnf-leave 3sgfnf-eat-AWAY-REM.P.REP 3sgfnf-eat

(128) kenani-pu-pidana-niki     di-h^a     thuy
nice-AUG-REM.P.REP-COMPL 3sgfnf-eat all

(129) di-pe-pidana-niki     di-sita     diha nawi ki
3sgfnf-leave-REM.P.REP-COMPL 3sgfnf-finish he man

'The man ate a little. When they, (including) the father-in-law, saw it, he (the father) said,

'eat immediately, you too, with me', he said. 'yes, I will eat,' he said, he took a thigh, and ate it away, it was nice, the man ate it all up.'

(130) asyapi-nuku     pi-yake-ta     di-a-pidana
pepperpot-TOP.NON.A/S 2sg-put.together+CAUS-CAUS 3sgfnf-go-REM.P.REP

'Put away the pepper pot, he said.'

(131) ne-pidana     mawali     nawi ki     di-musu     di-nu
then-REM.P.REP snake man 3sgfnf-go.out 3sgfnf-come

(132) di-na     di-sape-pidana     phia-hna     i:na
3sgfnf-OBJ 3sgfnf-speak-REM.P.REP you-PAUS woman:PL

(133) meninite     di-a     di-sata
NEG+want+TOP.ADV+CL:AN 3sgfnf-say 3sgfnf-greet

(134) dhima-pidana     nuhua     ^ama-ma     nu-itu-kanape
3sgfnf+hear-REM.P.REP 1  two-CL:FEM 1sg-daughter-PL

(135) nu-de-naka     pi-siwa     pi-yeka     di-a-pidana
1sg-have-PRES.VIS 2sg-self 2sg-know 3sgfnf-say-REM.P.REP
‘Then the snake-man came out and said to him, ‘You are the one women do not like’, he asked, ‘I have two daughters, it is up to you (lit. you know yourself)’, he said.’

(136) ka:-pidana   dihmeta-niki   diha-misini
so-REM.P.REP   3sgnf+think-COMPL   he-too

‘He (the man) made the decision (lit. though thus).’

(137) pa-kada   yamina   wasā   iiri   wa-inu   nai
one-CL:DAY   day   let’s   game   1pl-kill   cousin:VOC

(138) di-a-pidana   haw   di-a-pidana   diha-sini
3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP   yes   3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP   he-TOO

(139) wasā   na-khani-pidana   awakada-se
let’s   3pl+go-AWAY-REM.P.REP   jungle-LOC

‘One day he (the snake) said, ‘Cousin, let’s go and hunt for game’. He too said, ‘Let’s (go)’. They went away to the jungle.’

(140) po:po:a
r
ìiri

(141) ai$:na   iiri   nu-inu   nu-yā-ka   nuha   nai
here+ADV   game   1sg-kill   1sg-stay-REC.P.VIS   I   cousin:VOC

(142) di-a   di-kalite-pidana   mawali-ne-seri
3sgnf-say   3sgnf-tell-REM.P.REP   snake-PL-SINGL

“I hunt here, cousin’, said the snake-man.’

(143) tuki   na-wha   āpia   dinu-pidana   di-na-pidana
little   3pl-sit   wild pig   3sgnf+come   3sgnf-OBJ-REM.P.REP

(144) dita   mawali-ne-seri
3sgnf+shoot.arrow   snake-PL-SINGL

‘They sat for some time, a wild pig came, the snake shot an arrow at him.’

(145) nai   pi-a   phita   di-a-pidana   nawiki-nuku
2sg-go   2sg+take   3sgnf-go-REM.P.REP   man-TOP.NON.A/S

cousin:VOC

“Cousin, you go and get (the pig)’, he said to the man.’

(146) haw   di-a   di-uka   di-ka-tha-pidena
yes   3sgnf-go   3sgnf-arrive   3sgnf-see-FR-REM.P.REP

(147) mawali-pasi-pidana   di-papa   di-uka   di-swa
snake-AUG-REM.P.REP   3sgnf-roll   3sgnf-arrive   3sgnf-stay
“Yes’, he went, he arrived and saw a big snake, a big snake was rolled (there), the man saw it, and became afraid.’

“You go there yourself, there is a big snake rolled up’, he said to him, to the snake.’

‘Yes, he went and took (it - an arrow that was a snake) away.’

‘For him (looking) it was an arrow, for the man looking it was a snake.’

The sequence -ne (focussed and/or agentive subject) and -nuku (topical non-subject) represents an instance of double marking of syntactic function in Tariana (see Aikhenvald forthcoming-h): -ne marks the function of the NP in the embedded clause, while -nuku marks the function of the clause itself.
'They waited a little, a big deer came, (the snake) shot an arrow. ‘Cousin, go and get (it)’, he said to the man. ‘Yes’, he said.'

(159) di-uka di-ka-pidena mawalya-pidana di-papa-ka
3sgnf-arrive 3sgnf-see-REM.P.REP snake+EMPH-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-roll-SEQ

(160) di-na mawali-pasi-naka di-papa neri-nuku
3sgnf-OBJ snake-AUG-PRES.VIS 3sgnf-roll deer-TOP.NON.A/S

(161) di-a di-kalite-pidana diha nai-nuku
3sgnf-say 3sgnf-tell-REM.P.REP he cousin:REF-TOP.NON.A/S

‘He arrived and saw: for him it was a snake rolled up (not an arrow). He said to his ‘cousin’, ‘There is a snake rolled over the deer’.’

(162) kwe pi-ni-kasu phia ka:ru-hna di-a-pidana
what 2sg-do-INT you be.scared-INTER.PRES.VIS 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

(163) diha mawali di-hwi-da dhipa di-pe hotho
he snake 3sgnf-head-CL:ROUND 3sgnf+grab 3sgnf-leave away

(164) di-pe-pidana diha-ne-nuku sideda-na-pidana
3sgnf-leave-REM.P.REP he-AG-TOP.NON.A/S arrow-CL:VERT-REM.P.REP

‘Why are you afraid’, said the snake. He grabbed its head and threw it away. For him (looking) it was an arrow (not a snake).’

(165) pa-ita wa-inu litena di-a-pidana
one-CL:AN 1pl-kill more 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

‘Let’s kill one more, he said.’

(166) kay-na-ni-nisawa kwisi di-a:ra di-uka
so-3pl-do-WHILE:DS curassow 3sgnf-fly 3sgnf-arrive

(167) di-wha-pidana
3sgnf-sit-REM.P.REP

‘While they did it, a curassow flew towards them and sat down.’

(168) ne-pidana di:ta-pita diha kwisi-nuku
then-REM.P.REP 3sgnf+shOOT.arrow-REP he curassow-TOP.NON.A/S

(169) nai pi-a phita di-a-pidana
cousin:VOC 2sg-go 2sg+take 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

(170) haw di-a di-ka-pidana mawalya-pidana
yes 3sgnf-say 3sgnf-see-REM.P.REP snake+EMPH-REM.P.REP

(171) di-swa-niki mawali-pasi-naka hi kwisi-nuku
3sgnf-stay-COMPL snake-AUG-PRES.VIS DEM:AN curassow-TOP.NON.A/S
‘Then he shot an arrow at the curassow. ‘Cousin, go and get (it)’, he said. ‘Yes’, he
(the man) said, he saw: there was a real snake there. The man said, ‘A huge snake is
rolled around the curassow.’

‘The snake-man heard him say so, he took the ‘arrow’ out.’

‘Let’s come back, it is over, we will eat’, they said.’

‘They came back home.’

‘Give this game to the last (i.e. the youngest) sister’, he said, said the snake-man. ‘Yes’,
said the man. He came back and gave (it) to the youngest (one).’
Then he told this man about women, ‘It is up to you as far as my younger sister is concerned, women do not like you anyway.’

‘The man thought a lot, he was very sad.’

‘The woman came out and told the man, ‘Follow me only in daytime, at night do not follow me’. The man did not listen to her.’

While they were sleeping, he said: Why did they really try to say this to me. He went secretly and saw: big snakes were licking themselves hanging in their hammocks. Pua! Big snakes are hanging (in hammocks), he said. He went to his future wife to have a look.’
'Early in the morning the snake said, ‘I will go fishing, you don’t go, I will go alone fishing’, he said, ‘you stay at home waiting, it is up to you what to do about my younger sister’, he said.’

‘The fathers (father and his brothers) went away to their gardens, the snakes’ gardens were pineapple bushes in the jungle.’

‘The fathers (father and his brothers) went away to their gardens, the snakes’ gardens were pineapple bushes in the jungle.’
‘In the afternoon, the ‘cousin’ returned from fishing, and said to the man, ‘Your mother is crying until losing her conscience, she remembers you (thinks about you), tomorrow we will go and see her’, said the snake to the man.’

Yes, he (man) said. The next day early the two of them went to see the man’s mother.’

‘They went a little upstream, they heard his mother cry. So they floated and saw that the sister-in-law came to get water. The snake asked the man, ‘What is it you want for this one who dislikes you’, he asked. ‘We’ll kill (her)’, said the man.’
“Yes, let’s take hooks’. They went downstream, then went upstream, cut two hooks, split in halves, the snake man made a trap with his saliva.’

‘Let’s go now’, he said. They went downstream, they paddled and went upstream. Then she came down to get water. ‘What do you want for her’, he (snake) asked.’
"It is good', the man said to the snake, 'Let's leave the trap standing here, tomorrow we will come and see how she is', he said (the snake). She stayed inside the trap. Then they left (it) standing and returned (home).'

"At snake's house don't tell what we did, I will take you to your mother tomorrow, she is feeling bad, since she loves you', he said to the man.'
‘The next day it dawned. ‘Let’s go and see the trap’, he said (the man). ‘A cipó vine must have broken’, he (the snake) said, the woman’s grandfather sniffing snuff because of the snake having killed his granddaughter.’

‘They went upstream, he (the man) took the trap, pushed the vine and let the trap go off, then the woman went up, already stinking, her body was all visible floating.’

‘The man said, ‘This is what she deserves (lit. let her think), the bad one who did not want me’. ‘You did it yourself’, answered the snake.’
They did this and returned to the snakehouse. Then he (the snake) came and said, ‘Don’t tell your relatives about what we did; don’t tell your mother that I did this while going around, don’t say (it)’, said the snake man.

‘Tomorrow I will take you to your mother’s, my younger sister will not come with you, only you go and see’, said the snake to his in-law. ‘I will take her, she is my wife indeed’, said the man.

‘Let’s’, said the man, ‘let’s take you to your mother’.89

---

89 *Dalipaki* is a general term for an in-law of the same generation as ego (not included in Table 8).
“She will not go’, said the snake, ‘let’s go, I will put you onto the same place as the one I took you from,’ he said.’

‘They went up to the place where he met him and took him into the water, he left him, and he went outside and came back to this world.’

‘He went upstream towards his mother, and she was crying because she loved him.’

‘Why are you crying, Mum’, he said. “You guys made me suffer’, she answered, ‘you disappeared, too, and the day before yesterday a snake ate up your sister-in-law, too’, she said.’
“She deserves it, because she disliked me’, he answered.’

‘The man’s wife had said before he came, ‘When you call me, turn a plate, make it float and hit the plate’, she said to her husband, ‘when it sounds like this, I will come’, she said before he went.’

“She told me so’, he said. After he said this, he took the plate, went down to the port, made the plate float and turned it: phu, po, po, calling his wife.’
One day he said to his old mother, ‘I am married to a white woman’, he said to his old mother. ‘Go and bring her, I want to see her’, said the mother. ‘Yes, you want to see her, I am not telling you a lie’, he said.

‘He took the plate, went down, called her, turned the plate, made it float and hit it: pho-pho-pho, after some time she came up.’
“My mother wants to see (you),’ he said to his wife.’

(323) di-ka-ka-nuku ina\textsuperscript{ru}-pasi-pidena
3sgnf-see-SEQ-TOP.NON.A/S woman-AUG-REM.P.REP

(324) dihya ha-do du-ka-ka-nuku
he parent-FEM 3sgnf-see-SEQ-TOP.NON.A/S

(325) mawali-pasi-pidena kaw\textsuperscript{ir}ya-ka\textsuperscript{ru}-pasi-pidena ^amema
snake-AUG-REM.P.REP painted-PURP-AUG-REM.P.REP two+CL:PAIR

(326) kaw\textsuperscript{ir}ya-ka\textsuperscript{ru}-pasi-pidena
painted-PURP-AUG-REM.P.REP

‘For him looking it was a big (and handsome) woman, for her is was a big snake,
painted, painted from both sides.’

(327) was\textsuperscript{a} wa-ka diwesewya-nuku na: ne\$yu\$ let’s 1pl-see then-TOP.NON.A/S 3pl+go 3pl+go.up

(328) na-pidena duhua mawali i-sa-do
3pl+go-REM.P.REP she snake INDF-spouse-FEM

(329) yakoleka dhue-ka du-a ma\^a-pidena
door 3sgf+enter-SEQ 3sgf-go middle-REM.P.REP

(330) nawiki ha-do-pe\textsuperscript{ru} du-ka
man parent-FEM-OLD:FEM 3sgf-see

(331) har\textsuperscript{a}me dhuema-thani du-yami-kha du-a-pidena
afraid 3sgf+cry-AWAY 3sgf-die-AWAY 3sgf-go-REM.P.REP

(332) du-yami-wani-pidena duha duha-ne du-ka-ka
3sgf-die-REALLY-REM.P.REP she she-AG 3sgf-see-SEQ

(333) mawali-pasi-pidena du-hue du-nu
snake-AUG-REM.P.REP 3sgf-enter 3sgf-come

“Let’s go and see’. Then they went up, the snake woman came through the door. The old
woman saw, she was afraid and cried, she died, she really died, because she saw a huge
snake come in.’

(349) a\textsuperscript{i}$\textsuperscript{s}$-na kalisi di-sisa
here-REM.P.VIS tell-NOM 3sgnf-end

‘Here the story finishes.’

**Story 9. A Widow.** Author: Jusé Brito.

**Uphe-do**
long.ago+parent-FEM
Widow

(1) pa-pio uphe-do du-sa-niri di-yami-kayami
one-CL:TIME long.ago+parent-FEM 3sgf-spouse-MASC 3sgnf-die-AFTER:DS
(2) du-ya du-emhani du-yã-hni-pidana du:zi-tiki-ne
3sgnf-cry 3sgnf-walk 3sgnf-stay-ANT-REM.P.REP 3sgnf+son-DIM-INS

‘Once there was a widow. After her husband died, she was walking crying with her small son.’

(3) pa-kada hinipuku-se du-a-pidana-khani
one-CL:DAY garden-LOC 3sgf-go-REM.P.REP-AWAY

‘One day she went to the garden.’

(4) hinipuku-se du:ka mhinisi dhue-ka-pidana
3sgf-go-REM.P.REP garden-LOC worms 3sgf-dig-SEQ-REM.P.REP

(5) duhua hipe waliku-se pima hiku-pidana kwa!
she ground inside-LOC sound appear-REM.P.REP what!

(6) kani-mha pima-sõ du-a dhumeta-pidana
where-PRES.NON.VIS sound-INTER.INFR 3sgf-say 3sgf-think-REM.P.REP

‘She came to the garden, and while she was digging worms (for fishing), there was a sound in the ground. ‘What, where could it be sounding from’, she thought.’

(7) di-pu-mi dhuma du-theta-pidana
3sgnf-follow-NOM 3sgnf-hear 3sgnf-lean-REM.P.REP

(8) di-apise-pidana pima apu kayu-pidana pima
3sgf-under-REM.P.REP sound so-REM.P.REP sound

(9) di-ma-ra di-a kay du-ni-pidana dhuka te dhuka
3sgf-go.down 3sgf-go so 3sgf-do-REM.P.REP 3sgf+dig until 3sgf+dig

(10) du-keta-pidena diha u:ni
3sgf-encounter-REM.P.REP he water

(11) di-ma-ra-ni-puna-nuku
3sgf-go down-TOP.ADV-CL::STRETCH-TOP.NON.A/S

‘After she leaned and heard underneath as if a spring was sounding, as if it was floating down, so she dug and dug until she found the channel of water going down.’

(12) diha-puna-se ne ku:phe maïa-da-pidana
he-CL::STRETCH-LOC then fish good-CL::ROUND-REM.P.REP

(13) maïa-peni ku:phe-mia-pidana
In this channel there was good fish, only good fish, matrinxão, aracú brabo, aracú pintado, pacú branco, pacú do igarapé, all the fish was there, in this channel, it was black from fish floating.

While she was doing it, a man appeared. ‘You are in a bad way with your little son. When you want to eat fish, take it from this hole and eat’, he said.’

‘Take the right number as many as you want to eat, if you want many, take ten, do not take too many’, he said.’

‘Yes’, she said, she was doing, too, as he said.’
(28) hinipuku du-a-ka ka: ama-ita madalita dhupa
garden 3sgf-go-SEQ so two-CL:AN three+CL:AN 3sgf+grab

(29) du-yâ-nhi-pidana
3sgf-stay-ANT-REM.P.REP

‘When she went to the garden, she used to take two-three fish.’

(30) ehkwapi-pe hindapada-pidana kay du-ni du-yâ-nhi
day-REM.P.REP every-REM.P.REP so 3sgf-do 3sgf-stay-ANT

‘Every day she did this.’

(31) kayu du-ni-ka na-ka diha yakale-peni na-ka
so 3sgf-do-SEQ 3pl-see he village-PL:AN 3pl-see

(32) na-sape-pidena na-yâ-nhi kwe-hna du-ni
3pl-speak-REM.P.REP 3pl-stay-ANT what-INTER.PRES.VIS 3sgf-do

(33) du-inu kuphe maîa-peni-mia du-hâ-ka na-pidena
3sgf-kill fish good-PL:AN-ONLY 3sgf-eat-SEQ 3pl+say-REM.P.REP

‘While she was doing so, the villagers saw and were talking, ‘How come she gets only
good fish to eat’, they said.’

(34) pa-kada du-siri di-sata dhima-pidena
one-CL:DAY 3sgf-husband’s.brother 3sgnf-greet 3sgnf+hear-REM.P.REP

(35) kwe-hna pi-ni pinu kuphe maîa-peni-mia
what-INTER.PRES.VIS 2sg-do 2sg+kill fish good-PL:AN-ONLY

(36) di-a-pidena nhulitû-ka nu-yâ-ka
3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP 1sg+fish-SEQ 1sg-stay-REC.P.VIS

(37) du-a-pidana dhuepa
3sgf-say-REM.P.REP 3sgf+answer

‘One day her husband’s brother asked, ‘How come you kill only good fish’, he said. ‘I
fish’, she answered.’

(38) pa:-kada duha hinipuku du-a-ka di-a-pidana
one-CL:DAY she garden 3sgf-go-SEQ 3sgnf-say-REM.P.REP

(39) hi$ piri nu-ine-pidana di-dia de:ri
DEM:AN 2sg+son 1sg-INS-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-stay banana

(40) alia-ka diha di-api nu-hâ-ka nuha-de-niki
EXIST-SEQ he 3sgnf-with 1sg-eat I-FUT-COMPL
‘One day when she was going to the garden, he said, ‘Your son will stay with me, there are bananas, I will eat with him’, he said. ‘Yes’, she said, left the son and went.’

‘After she went, her husband’s brother asked the child, ‘How do you kill fish? ‘We fish’, said the child. ‘You lying, I fish in vain, and never get good fish’ he (the man) said.’

‘You are doing it differently, tell me, if you don’t tell me, I’ll kill you.’
Yes, we will see tomorrow.

The next day the widow went elsewhere, he (the man) said, ‘It is good he (the child) stayed with me (yesterday), let him stay with me now.’

‘After she went, ‘Let’s go and see’, he said, he took the child and they came in the garden.’

‘Where is the spring where you get fish from’, he asked.’

‘It was here’, he said, and showed (it) to him.’

The next day the widow went elsewhere, he (the man) said, ‘It is good he (the child) stayed with me (yesterday), let him stay with me now.’

‘After she went, ‘Let’s go and see’, he said, he took the child and they came in the garden.’

‘Where is the spring where you get fish from’, he asked.’

‘It was here’, he said, and showed (it) to him.’

The next day the widow went elsewhere, he (the man) said, ‘It is good he (the child) stayed with me (yesterday), let him stay with me now.’

‘After she went, ‘Let’s go and see’, he said, he took the child and they came in the garden.’

‘Where is the spring where you get fish from’, he asked.’

‘It was here’, he said, and showed (it) to him.’

The next day the widow went elsewhere, he (the man) said, ‘It is good he (the child) stayed with me (yesterday), let him stay with me now.’

‘After she went, ‘Let’s go and see’, he said, he took the child and they came in the garden.’

‘Where is the spring where you get fish from’, he asked.’

‘It was here’, he said, and showed (it) to him.’

The next day the widow went elsewhere, he (the man) said, ‘It is good he (the child) stayed with me (yesterday), let him stay with me now.’

‘After she went, ‘Let’s go and see’, he said, he took the child and they came in the garden.’

‘Where is the spring where you get fish from’, he asked.’

‘It was here’, he said, and showed (it) to him.’
he village all 3pl+go-COMPL 3pl+arrive

‘All the villagers came to see, to see this channel.’

‘They were frightened, there was good fish floating, all the fish was there.’

‘Then they (said), ‘Let’s organise an offering feast to those upstream.’

‘They went there and came back.’

‘The widow did not know that they had done this.’

‘The other day they went to tell the ones upstream in the middle of the day.

‘Make caxiri (manioc beer), we will make a ritual offering of fish to you.’

‘Yes, they said.’
'They started killing fish, the very next day they killed a little too many, they dug, they grabbed and killed a lot.'
‘So they killed, returned, smoked, they were going to offer (the fish) on the marked
day. That day in the afternoon the boss of the hole said to the widow.’

“You, too, go with them, don’t drink with them, when it dawns they will be fast asleep,
you will recognise the sound in the earth”, he said.’

‘The widow was very sad. ‘How will it be,’ she thought.’
They were drinking until midday, in the midday the manioc beer finished, the next day all were drunk and fast asleep.

In the middle of the night the widow heard lying in a hammock, in the middle a sound could be heard,

She got up, untied her hammock, took her little son, went away (into the jungle), in the end of the village it (the ground) was splitting.

The verb 'close one’s eyes, sleep' is cognate to proto-Arawak *ima(ka) (see Payne 1991); it is frequently used in a serial verb construction with 'be asleep' to mean 'sleep'.
'She stepped across the split space, she went on a bit, the big village fell off (into this space), with people, people and houses disappeared and went down.'

(116) du-wa du-a maka-pusita-tiki du-ni syawa 3sgf-enter 3sgf-go large-CL:CLEARING-DIM 3sgf-do fire

(117) du-kuka amaku du-tutu duma-pidana du-a 3sgf-lit hammock 3sgf-tie 3sgf+sleep-REM.P.REP 3sgf-go

'She went to a small clearing, made fire, tied her hammock, and went to sleep.'

(118) halia di-swa du-nudu-ka-pidana sede-pidana early 3sgf-stay 3sgf-come 3sgf-see-REM.P.REP NEG.EX-REM.P.REP

(119) diha yakale maka-nai-pasi-pidana di-wha-niki he village big-CL:LAKE-AUG-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-sit-COMPL

'Early she went to see, the village was not there, a big lake was there.'

(120) kayu di-a-ka du-ka du-dia du-nu-pidana ke te so 3sgnf-go-SEQ 3sgf-see 3sgf-return 3sgf-come-REM.P.REP until

(121) du-san–ri-miki–ri ya-pani-si-se 3sgf-spouse-MASC-NOM.PAST-MASCPOSS-house-NPOSS-LOC

'After this she went back to her late husband’s village.'

(122) pa-ita pedale-nuku du-dia du-ka one-CL:AN old-TOP.NON.A/S 3sgf-return 3sgf-see


(124) na-yâre-ka thuy na du-a du-kalite-pidena 3pl-disappear-SEQ all 3pl+go 3sgf-say 3sgf-tell-REM.P.REP

'She saw an old man and said to him, ‘Your relatives over there are in a bad way, they all disappeared’, she said.'

(125) pa:-kada du-a du-ka-pidana diha-yawa-nuku one-CL:DAY 3sgf-say 3sgf-see-REM.P.REP he-CL:HOLE-TOP.NON.A/S

(126) sede-pidana di-ema-niki kwe pa-keta-hyu NEG.EX-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-stand-COMPL what IMP-meet-TARGET

(127) mahyuna-ma-pidana hiku-pidana di-ni difficult-EXC-REM.P.REP appear-REM.P.REP 3sgnf-do

(127) di-ya$:~re diha-yawa 3sgnf-disappear he-CL:HOLE
‘The next day she went to see the hole, it was not there, it was impossible to see it. This is how the hole disappeared.’

(128) kida di-sisa
ready 3sgnf-finish

‘Ready. The story is finished.’

**Story 10. The Tariana language.** Author: Graciliano Brito.

**Tariana yanu-pe**
Tariana thing-PL

**Tariana language**

(1) hiku-na di-a hi$ waku wa-sape-nipe
appear-REM.P.VIS 3sgnf-go DEM:AN 1pl+speech 1pl-talk-NOM

(2) waya-nipe di-sisa-kasu thuime-sawa-pe yanu-pe
1pl+speak-NOM 3sgnf-end-INT all.INDIV-CL:GROUP-PL thing,language-PL

‘This is how it was for our speech, our way of talking to finish, for languages of all the groups (too).’

(3) waha wa-bueta-ka-riku$e hi$ di-ke`a di-yâ-nhi
we 1pl-learn-SEQ-WHILE:DS DEM:AN 3sgnf-begin 3sgnf+stay-ANT

‘This had already started when we were studying.’

(4) kayu-maka kasina-nuku diha pa-sape-nipe
this-AFF now+ADV-TOP.NON.A/S he IMP-talk-NOM

(5) di-sisa di-ruku di-a-naka
3sgnf-end 3sgnf-go.down 3sgnf-go-PRES.VIS

‘This is why now this talk (i.e. language) is finishing.’

(6) payape-se-nuku waha wa-bueta-ka-riku$e-nuku
old.days-LOC-TOP.NON.A/S we 1pl-learn-SEQ-WHILE:DS-TOP.NON.A/S

(7) pai-ne-ya-dapana pa-yâ-hyuna paweya
father-PL-POSS-CL:HAB IMP-live-HABIT together

(8) taria-sawa kuphemena-sawa-pe panuma-pe yase-ne

(9) thuya-sawa-pe pa-yâ-hyuna-na ne-nuku
all:NON.INDIV-CL:GROUP-PL IMP-live-HABIT-REM.P.VIS then-TOP.NON.A/S

(10) naha pai-ne dalipa-se
they father-PL near-LOC
'In the old days when we were studying we lived all together in fathers’ (i.e. missionaries’) house, the Tariana, the Piratapuya, the Guanano, the Tucano, all the groups together we used to live, at the fathers’ place.'

(11) kayu-maka hi$ yase-niku-mia-na pa-sape-hyuna
    thus-AFF DEM:AN Tucano-PL+AFF-ONLY-REM.P.VIS IMP-talk-HABIT

(12) ne-se-nuku kayu-maka pha Taria-seri-kheya-nha
    then-LOC-TOP.NON.A/S thus-AFF IMP$ Tariana-INDIV-IN.SPITE-PAUS

(13) diha yase-niku ma-sape-kadite kayu ka:-kheya
    he Tucano-PL+AFF NEG-talk-NEG+CL:AN thus REL+go-IN.SPITE

'So we used to speak only Tucano. Though we were Tariana who did not speak Tucano,92 we were this way.'

(14) ne-se-na pha pa-sape pa-bueta na-ine-nuku
    then-LOC-REM.P.VIS IMP IMP-talk IMP-learn 3pl-INS-TOP.NON.A/S

'Then we learnt from them how to speak (Tucano).'

(15) pha pa-sape pa-bueta pa-dia-ka pa:-se-nha
    IMP IMP-talk IMP-learn IMP-remain-SEQ IMP+go-LOC-PAUS

(16) pha-niri-ne dalipa-se pa-dia-ka paka-nha
    IMP+parent-MASC-LOC near-LOC IMP-return-SEQ IMP+arrive-PAUS

(17) yase-niku-ne-mia-na pa-sape-hyuna-nha
    Tucano-PL+AFF-INS-ONLY-REM.P.VIS IMP-talk-HABIT-PAUS

'Having learnt how to speak, when we returned to our parents, we used to speak only Tucano.'

(18) kapemani-ma-mhana nu-a-ka nuha
    be.ashamed-EXC-MENT 1sg-say-SEQ I

(19) pa:ii-sini kaya hi$ kuphemena-ne-sini kaya
    other-TOO like.this DEM:AN Piratapuya-AG-TOO like.this

(20) kayu-mia-na na:-nha
    thus-ONLY-REM.P.VIS 3pl+go-PAUS

---

91 The impersonal pronoun is often used as first person inclusive, to match the Tucano patterns (cf. Aikhenvald forthcoming-c).

92 This statement indicates that Tucano was not their main language: in the Vaupés those who have some knowledge of a language which is not their father’s are often reluctant to admit they know it at all. This was the case of Maria Brito, the wife of Cândido Brito, a Piratapuya herself, who refused point blank to tell any stories in Tariana; however, her knowledge of at least some parts of the Tariana lexicon was superior to that of her children, ‘legitimate’ Tariana speakers.
‘They were really ashamed, I am saying, others, too, the Piratapuya, too, were like that.’

(21) hiku-na  di-a  di-ke’a  di-a  hi$  wa-yaaru-pe
appear-REM.P.VIS  3sgnf-go  3sgnf-start  3sgnf-go  DEM:AN  1pl-thing-PL

‘This is how is started, [the process which led to] dropping our language, our talk.’

(22) pa-sape-nipe  kasina-nuku  di-hwe-ta-kasu-nha
IMP-talk-NOM  now+ADV-TOP.NON.A/S  3sgnf-fall+CAUS-CAUS-INT-PAUS

(23) kasina-nuku  naha  wa-inipe-se-nha
now+ADV-TOP.NON.A/S  they  1pl-children-CONTR-PAUS

‘Now our children talk, they feel ashamed (to speak Tariana).’

(24) na:-naka  na-sape  kapemani-ma-naka  nhameta-nha
3pl+go-PRES.VIS  3pl-talk  be.ashamed-EXC-PRES.VIS  3pl+feel-PAUS

‘Now our children talk, they feel ashamed (to speak Tariana).’

(25) ya:se-niku-mia-naka  na-sape-hna
Tucano-PL+AFF-ONLY-PRES.VIS  3pl-talk-PAUS

‘They speak only Tucano.’

(26) kasina-nuku  thuime-sawa-pe
now+ADV-TOP.NON.A/S  all.INDIV-CL:GROUP-PL

(27) dihya  ya:se-niku-nuku  na-sape-naka
he  Tucano-PL+AFF-TOP.NON.A/S  3pl-talk-PRES.VIS

(28) hiku-na  di-a  di-yã-nhi
appear-REM.P.VIS  3sgnf-go  3sgnf-stay-ANT

(29) hi$  wa-yaaru-pe  wa-sape-nipe  di-sisa-kasu
DEM:AN  1pl-thing-PL  1pl-talk-NOM  3sgnf-end-INT

‘Now all the groups speak Tucano, this is how it appeared and still is, for our language, our talk to come to an end.’

(30) kasina  ka-tawina-kani  kwaka yase-niku-mia-naka
now+ADV  REL-grow-REL:PL  what  Tucano-PL+AFF-ONLY-PRES.VIS

(31) na-sape-hna  wa-yaaru-pe-nuku  nhema-naka
3pl-talk-PAUS  1pl-thing-PL-TOP.NON.A/S  3pl+hear-IN.SPITE

(32) nhema-kane  kapemani-ma-naka  diha-naku
3pl+hear-IN.SPITE93  be.shamed-EXC-PRES.VIS  he-TOP.NON.A/S

93 -naka -kane is a discontinuous morpheme meaning ‘in spite of’.
'Those who grow up now speak only Tucano, in spite of the fact that they understand [Tariana], they are now ashamed of speaking it.'

References
—. forthcoming-d. ‘The typology of serial constructions and verb compounding: evidence from Tariana (North Arawak).’ *Studies in Language*.
—. in prep. *A Grammar of Tariana*.
— and the Brito family. ms. *Tariana Vocabulary*.


Index

accent, 17
acculturation, also see cultural change, 14, 29
adjectives, 18, 19
affines, 29, 30
agnates, 29, 30
Aiari, 8, 9, 10
Amarizana, 8
Amorim, A., 16
Andes, 15
Apui, 10, 13, 86
Arawak, 8, 9, 10, 13, 14, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21
Arawak(an), 8, also see Arawak areal diffusion, see convergence and Tucano influence artefacts, 22
Aruák, see Arawak
aspect, 18

Baniwa, 8, 9, 10, 11, 14, 15, 17, 20, 22, 25, 28, 30, 32, 35, 38, 88
Baniwa, Tariana relations with, 28
Baniwa of Guainia, 8, also see Warekena Baniwa of Íçana, see Baniwa
Bará (East Tucano), 9, 32
Bará, 28, also see Kakua-Nukak
Barasano, 9, 29, 33
Bare, 8, 9, 20, 33
Barnes, J., 9, 10, 18
Beks &ta, C., 13, 16, 28
belief system, also see mythology, 30, 32
Bessa Freire, J., 9
Béteille, A., 10
beverages, 22
Biocca, E., 16, 21, 26, 28
Brito, Cândido, 11, 15, 28, 29, 37, 39, 45, 69, 83
Brito, Graciliano, 16, 17, 38, 103, 141
Brito, Jusé, 38, 132
Brito, Juvinho, 37, 38, 88, 110
Brito, Maria, 35, 142
Brito, Olívia, 35, 38, 93
Brito family, 11, 16, 17, 21, 27, 28, 29, 36, 37
Brüzzi, A., 10, 11, 13, 14, 15, 16, 21, 22, 25, 26, 28, 29, 30, 35, 36
Buchillet, D., 14
Buopé, 13
Carapana, 9, 20
Carib, 28
Catholic church, see Catholic missionaries
Catholic missionaries, 9, 11, 12, 15, 16, 30, 38, 142
causatives, 17, 18
Central Tucano, 9, 20
ceremonies, 10, 34
Christianity, 30
cigar, 10, 34
classifiers, 18, 19, 21
clause linking, 18
convergence, also see Tucano influence, 10, 11, 17-20, 142
Coudreau, H., 16
Cubeo, 9, 10, 20, 28, 29, 33
cultural change, 11, 14, 29
dabucuri, also see festivals, 36
Dâw, 9, 20
dekwana, 28
demonstratives, 17, 18, 19
derbyshire, D.C., 28
desano, 9, 11, 14, 15, 28, 33, 29
dixon, R.M.W., 17, 18, 36
East Tucano, 8, 9, 10, 11, 14, 17, 19, 20, 21, 33
ergativity, 17
ex-Makú, 10, 26
exchange between tribes, 10, 28
exogamy, 8, also see marriage
Ferreira, A. R., 13, 15
festivals, 22
fishing, 22
food, 22
food taboos, 33
fruit, 22
Galvão, E., 21, 25, 26
garments, 25
gender, grammatical, 19
gender roles, 22
Giacone, p., 16
Gilij, p., 8
Goehner, M., 29
gold, Tariana knowledge of, 15
Goldman, I., 21, 26, 29
Grimes, B., 9
Guanano, 9, 11, 12, 13, 15, 20, 28, 29, 44, 102, 142
Guarequena, see Warena
Gumperz, J.J., 10
Harner, M.J., 22, 25, 33
Hemming, J., 15
hierarchical organisation, 10, 17, 26, 28
Hohôdene, 15, 28, 38, also see Baniwa
Huber, 16
Hugh-Jones, C., 21, 25, 26, 29, 30
Hugh-Jones, S., 21, 26, 29, 33, 35, 36
hunting, 22
Hupda-Yuhup, 9, 20
Iauarete, 8, 14, 15, 25
Iauarete, Tariana of, 17
Içana, 8, 9, 10, 11, 22, 25, 35
identity, language as, 10, 16
Indo-European languages, 9
initiation, female, 33
initiation, male, 33
innovations of Tariana, 8, 17, 19
Ipanoré, 14, 15, 16
Ipanoré, Tariana of, 17
Iyäine, Iyemi, 16
Jackson, J.E., 9, 11, 21, 26, 29, 30, 32, 33, 35, 38
Ji-Ponta, 8
Jivaro, 25, 33
Kakua-Nukak, 9
Kaline (a Tariana subtribe), 16, 26, 28, 36
Kaufman, T., 8
kinship terms, 21, 30, 31
kinship system, 29, 30, 31, 32
Koch-Grünberg, T., 8, 10, 13, 15, 16, 17, 25
Koreguaje, 20
Kumandene, 16
Kurripako, 8, also see Baniwa
language attrition, see language obsolescence
language endangerment, 10, 11, 15, 16, 21-22
language obsolescence, 8, 10, 11, 15, 16, 21-22
lexical shifts, 20
loanwords, 20
loanwords, inhibition against, 8, 10, 20
longhouse, 25, 26, 27
lingua franca of the Vaupes, 9, 11, 16
lingua franca, Nheengatu as, 9, 11
lingua franca, Tucano as, 9, 11, 16
Língua Geral, see Nheengatu
Loukotka, 16
Macuna, 9
Maipuran, or Maipurean, 8, also see Arawak
Makiritare, 28
Makú, 8, 9, 10, 11, 14, 15, 19, 21, 22, 26, 28, 30
Makú, Tariana relations with, 28
Manao, 8
Mandawaca (Mawaca), 8
marriage, 9, 10, 21, 29, 30, 31, 32
mythology, 30
Martins, S., 9, 10, 28
Martins, V., 9, 28
Martius, K., 15, 16
Mayhene, 29
meals, 25
menstruation, 33, 35
Merrifield, W., 29
missionaries, see Catholic missionaries
mood, 18
moon, myths about, 30, 34, 35
Moore, D., 9
Moreira, I., 8, 16, 36
Moreira, A., 8, 16, 36
multilingualism, 8, 9, 10
Muniz, Aníbal, 16
Muniz, Eliseu, 16

Nadêb, 20
naming, 36
Natterer, J., 15
Nheengatu, also Lingua Geral, 9, 11, 12, 14, 15, 16, 20
Nheengatu, Tariana name for, 9
Nheengatu, as lingua franca, 9, 11
Nimuendajú, C., 8, 10
Noronha, J., 13, 15
North Arawak, see Arawak

offering, 34
Old Warekena, see Warena
Oliveira, A.E., 32

Paca (river), 9
Papurí, 9, 13, 15
Passe, 8
passive, 18
Payne, D.L., 8, 139
phonology, 17, 20
phratry, 26
Piratapuya, 9, 10, 26, 29, 33, 102, 142
place names, 11-14
plural, 18, 30
poison, fish, 22
polysynthesis, 17, 18
Portuguese, 9, 10, 11, 12, 20, 21, 22, 26, 30, 33, 35, 36
possession, 19
pronouns, 19, 21
Proto-Arawak, 8, 17, 139
Querari, 9, 13, 50

Ramírez, H., 18
Reed, R.B., 16
Reichel-Dolmatoff, G., 21, 25, 35
Rodrigues, A.D., 8, 9, 16
Rodrigues, Marcília, 38

Salesians, see Catholic missionaries
Sampaio, F.X.R., 13, 15
season, dry, 23, 24
season, rainy, 23, 24
Secoya, 20
serial verbs, 18, 22
shamans, 21, 33, 34
sib, 26
Silva da, Candelário, 25, 33
Silverwood-Cope, P., 10, 28
Siona, 20
Siriano, 9
snake people, 33
‘soldiers’, or underlings, 10, 28, 29
Sorensen, A., 9, 10, 21, 26, 29
Spanish, 9, 10
spirits, 36
Spruce, R., 15
Stradelli, E., 16
subtribes, also see hierarchical organisation, 10, 17, 26, 28
switch-reference, 17, 18, 21

taboos, 25, 35
Taiwano, 9
Tanimuca-Retuama, 20
Tariana, autodenomination of, 16
Tariana, dialects of, 16, 17, 26
Tariana, putative migrations of, 11
Tatevin, P.C., 20
Tatuyo, 9, 20
tense, 18
Tiquié, 9, 15
Tucano, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 25, 26, 28, 29, 30, 33, 35, 36, 38, 110, 142, 143
Tucano, loans from, 20
Tucano, as lingua franca, 9, 11, 16
Tucano, putative migrations of, 11
Tucano influence on Tariana, see

*convergence*

Tucano-speaking Tariana, 14, 16
Tupí-Guaraní, 9
Tupinambá, 9
Tuyuca, 9, 10

Uaupé, 15
Upper Aiari, see *Aiari*
Upper Rio Negro, 8, 9, 13, 15, 33

Vaupés, cultural homogeneity of, 21, 22, 30
Vaupés, language contacts in, 11, 15
Vaupés, multilingualism of, 8, 11
Vaupés, names of, 13

Waimaja, 9, 20
Wainuma, 8
Wallace, A., 15, 16
Wamiarikune (the only Tariana subtribe which has preserved the language), 12, 16, 26, 28, 37
Warekena, 8, 9, 17, 20
Warena, 8, 28
West Tucano, 20
West, B., 29
Wheeler, A., 16
white people, 33
Wilson, R., 10
Wirina, 8
Wright, R.M., 13

Xié, 8, 28
Xinguan Arawak, 18

Yabaana, 8
Yanomami, 9, 28
Yawi, Yavi (an erroneous name for Tariana), 16
year, structure of, 23, 24
Yumana, 8
Yurupary-tapuya, 16
Yurupary flute, 28, 30, 35, 37, 39, 40, 41, 83, 84, 88
Yuruti, 9, 20